CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of ſeveral ſtriking Scenes.

WITH

Curious and intereſting ANECDOTES of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, *and* PORTUGAL.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. III.

DUBLIN:
Printed by DILLON CHAMBERLAINE, in Dame Street, facing Fownes's Street.
MDCCLXV.

BRITISH MUSEUM
30
62
AUG

ADVERTISEMEMT.

THE circumſtances in which *the Adventures of a Guinea* fell into the hands of the Editor, as explained in the General Preface, account for this, and the former Additions to that Work.

The uncommon favour, with which the firſt Edition, imperfect as it was, was received, encouraged him to ſpare no pains for the recovery of the reſt of the Manuſcript: Though his ſucceſs however in this attempt exceeded his expectations, fear of the prejudice, in general too juſtly, entertained againſt *Continuations*, prevented his publiſhing, in the Second Edition, any more of what he had recovered, than could be added without enhancing the price. But as the ſale of ſo many numerous impreſſions, ſince that Addition, has entirely removed every ſhadow of ſuch fear, he thinks it would be injuſtice to the Publick to withhold the reſt from them any longer.

As to the objection made to *Continuations*, that they are written after the firſt deſign is compleated, and when the imagination is exhauſted,

hauſted, it can by no means affect the following ſheets, which are really *a Reſtitution of the Original*, not an Addition of any thing new; as will plainly appear to the judicious Reader, who will find the ſame ſcope of imagination, the ſame ſpirited freedom, and depth of remark in every period of theſe Volumes, which ſo eminently diſtinguiſhed the former; and trace the genuine connection through the whole.

For one great diſadvantage, which theſe Volumes lie under, Candour will make the juſt allowance, when the occaſion of it is conſidered.

This is the Printing of theſe Parts, thus detached, and by themſelves, with only references to the places, where they follow in the Context of the former Volumes; by which means they loſe the advantage of the general Fable, or as I may ſay, *Machine*, which ſo happily introduces and ſupports the whole, and of which no more could be recovered; all, but what was at firſt publiſhed, being cancelled by the Orthodoxy of the pretended Clergyman, into whoſe hands the Manuſcript unfortunately fell, who ſpared no more than was indiſpenſibly neceſſary to open the deſign. *

Had

* *See the General Preface.*

ADVERTISEMENT.

Had the Editor attended ſolely to his own intereſt, it would have ſuggeſted to him to have publiſhed this, as he did the former Addition, inſerted regularly according to the Connection; as the eſtabliſhed reputation of the Work would enſure the ſale of the whole, even to thoſe, who had before purchaſed the former Volumes. But this was an artifice he was incapable of uſing; and he choſe to publiſh theſe Volumes, in this manner, rather than incur the leaſt ſuſpicion of ſo mercenary a deſign. He hopes therefore, that a diſadvantage occaſioned by ſuch a delicate diſintereſtedneſs will not be looked upon as a defect; and that the whole will be viewed together, before any part is accuſed of abruptneſs, or want of uniformity to the general deſign.

The abſurdity, and injuſtice of levelling the general reproof of vice, againſt particular Perſons, and tracing to real characters a work of mere imagination, are too glaring to require proof. Mr. *Addiſon*, in the inſtance he has given in one of his *Spectators*, of *the whole Duty of Man*, has ſhewn that the beſt book that ever was written (humanly ſpeaking) is liable to be conſtrued into a ſcandalous libel, by ſuch a *Perverſion*.

The Editor of this Work has the ſatisfaction to ſee that whatever injurious attempts of that kind were at firſt made againſt it, they have not been able to prejudice it in the

opinion of the Publick, as appears from the great and continued demand for it, for ſo many years. Defamation may pleaſe the malignancy of Man for a day; but it muſt be merit that can ſtand the teſt of time. Such inſinuations are long ſince forgot, becauſe unſupported by truth; as will all of the ſame nature, which may be made againſt the Volumes now offered to the Publick, while the merit of them ſhall remain for the entertainment and inſtruction of ages.

THE

CONTENTS.

BOOK the FIRST.

CHAP. I.

INtroduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtop'd ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs,* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Chracter of his new maſter.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL'*s maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled.* 5

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL'*s maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence.* 9

CHAP. IV.

A characteriſtick conference between CHRYSAL'*s new maſter, and his friend the general. Remarks on war; with the cauſes and conſequences of ſeveral celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to, for courage in ſoldiers and ſubaltern officers, accounts politically for ſome apparent wrongs which they ſuffer.* 12

CHAP. V.

An officer deſires to ſpeak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable inſtance of ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer; with the bad conſequences of a ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the army. 15

CHAP. VI.

Continued. The officer acquits himſelf of the imputation of ingratitude by a piece of fooliſh generoſity. He perſwades the ſoldier, who had ſaved his life, to quit the army, for an uncommon reaſon. The conſequences of ſuch conduct, with an hint of the beſt qualifications for riſing in the army. 18

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter draws ſome intereſting compariſons between the land and ſea ſervices, which account for the different ſucceſs in them. The officer is admitted, and put under arreſt for preſuming to do more than his duty.* 21

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up, by CHRYSAL's *maſter, on the General's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an intereſting piece of inſtruction behind him. ——— Some ſhort but ſtriking ſketches of the progreſs of the enterprize.* 25

CHAP IX.

CHRYSAL's *attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young* SPANIARD, *who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter to prefer an extraordinary requeſt. The Hiſtory* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD. 28

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA's *father is taken up by the inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent, on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing, upon which,* DON ALPHONSO *comes in*

in deſpair to CHRYSAL'*s maſter to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs.* Page 33

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL'*s maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation. The only buſineſs of a general.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter performs his promiſe to* ALPHONSO, *into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of ſome* ENGLISH *ſailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 38

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural conſequences.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is flammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* 44

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL'*s new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between* CHRYSAL'*s maſter and two perſons of conſequence lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt.* 47

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life. 51

CHAP. XV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſchemes into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of CHRYSAL'*s maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 55

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchant-man. He ſhews another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice* 59

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.* 64

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL's *maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.* 68

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes true compaſſion; and ſhews the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it.* CHRYSAL's *maſter, is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.* 71

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land, and ſea-ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's

man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable. 76

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL's *maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general.* 81

BOOK the SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's *maſter makes ſome characteriſtick reflections. He is ſurprized at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome people's riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native* AMERICANS; *and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the cloſet, plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reaſon why the* AMERCIANS *are deſirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 87

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL's *maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences.* 95

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes his maſter's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progreſs. The manner in which he found the females of his houſehold engaged. Remarks on* FINERY. *Account of their amuſements, with the manner in which they uſually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL'*s maſter kept peace in his family.* Page 97

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL'*s maſter is honourably rewarded for his ſervices. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd inſtance of conjugal love; and refuſes the civil offer of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter, for a natural reaſon.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 102

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL'*s miſtreſs gives ſome ſtriking inſtances of female conſiſtency. She is cured of her grief, by a perſon of accompliſhments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence.* CHRYSAL'S *miſtreſs marries, and he changes his ſervice for that of an old maſter.* 107

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His maſter is ſaluted by a ſight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR. 110

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Conſequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary ſentence attempted to be reverſed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary perſons. The reaſon of this; and why it miſcarried. More myſteries. Juſt fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the conſequences of this affair to a certain corps.* 113

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. He gets a view of a court of* CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occaſion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimſical application of an old ſtory produces the ſtrange effect of putting a counſellor out of countenance. The neceſſity of abſolute power in ſome governments; with a common deciſion, by which nothing is decided.* Page 118

CHAP IX.

CHRYSAL's *maſter joins a remarkable ſet of company. Their characters.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Account of the enterprize on which his late maſter's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands.* 122

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor. 125

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequence of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means for remedying this, and other abuſes. 128

CHAP. XII.

The ſyſtem of policy by which CHRYSAL's *maſter governed his ſtate. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reaſon why ſo few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the preſent ſtate of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from ſucceſs. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other.* 131

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſits in judgment on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of* CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the effects of.* Page 134

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL's *maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.* 137

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſwades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctors attention to the murdereſs.* 141

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murdereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 145

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary ſociety. Some reflections not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules.* Page 149

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice in preferring* CHRYSAL's *maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *juſt as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſiter upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak.* 153

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL's *maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the inſtance of* CHRYSAL's *maſter is expelled the ſociety for preſuming to ridicule their rites. Farther conſequences of this affair make the ſuperiour break up his monaſtery, and build a church.* 157

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent; with ſome ſtriking inſtances of œconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for, from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth. 161

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him

him to try his talents, in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character. Page 164

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition. 167

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory. 170

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine, in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſter-ſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue. 175

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtop'd ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs,* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter.*

(*THERE being a war between* SPAIN *and* ENGLAND, CHRYSAL *in the ſhape of a* DOUBLOON *is preſented by a* SPANISH *governor to the captain of an* ENGLISH *man of war cruiſing off the coaſt of* MEXICO, *in return for his quitting his ſtation to give him an opportunity of ſending the treaſure to* EUROPE.)

" As this was a compliment of great conſequence " to the *Spaniards*, the captain had been ſo hand- " ſomely conſidered for it, that his deſires were ſatis- " fied, and he only wiſhed to be ſafe at home to enjoy " the wealth he had ſo happily acquired."—*Vol.* 1.—*Page* 53.

However impatient though he might be to return, it was neceſſary for him to find ſome pretence to juſtify a conduct ſo contrary to his duty, the time appointed by his ſuperiors for his continuing on that ſtation, not being near expired.

But a proper knowledge of the world is never at a loſs for expedients. He immediately came to a right underſtanding with the maſter of the ſhip, who alarming him ſuddenly at midnight with an account that her *ſtern-poſt* was looſe, and the reſt of the officers between ſleeping and waking formally ſigning his report without examining, he *bore away* directly for home with an happy heart, anticipating in imagination the enjoyment of all thoſe pleaſures, which he had hitherto looked at with a longing eye from a diſtance.

When man, confiding in his own wiſdom, quits the ſtraight path to ſtrike out a nearer to his wiſhes, he generally blunders into that which leads directly to their diſappointment. My maſter had not proceeded many days on his voyage, when he *fell in* one morning juſt at the dawn, with a mighty fleet, from which it was impoſſible for him to eſcape. His anxiety made him inſtantly conclude them enemies. He curſed his fate in the bitterneſs of his ſoul, and leaving the care of the ſhip to his officers, pretended to be ſick, and threw himſelf on his bed in agonies little ſhort of deſpair. " Was it for this?" (exclaimed he wringing his hands, and gnaſhing his teeth) " was it for this I be- " trayed my truſt, and favoured the enemies whom " I was ſent to diſtreſs? — For this did I put my ho- " nour in the power of a venal wretch, and deſert " my ſtation, in direct diſobedience to my orders? " But I am juſtly rewarded! I have ſtopped at no- " thing to gather wealth, and now I loſe that and " my liberty together. May every villain meet the " ſame fate!"

BRITISH MUSEUM 30 62 AUG

But

But the ſeverity of his diſtreſs laſted not long. As ſoon as it was clear day, the fleet which cauſed his fears was found to be *Engliſh*; the moment he was informed of which he recovered from his ſickneſs, and putting the beſt face he could upon the matter went to wait upon the Admiral.

Though the fleet which the Admiral commanded was irreſiſtibly ſuperior to any that could poſſibly be oppoſed to it, he was ſo deſirous of every addition of ſtrength, that he received my maſter with evident pleaſure; and never enquiring what had been the cauſe of his quitting his ſtation, informed him whither they were going, and congratulated him on the opportunity he ſhould have of making his fortune.

But this opportunity, promiſing as it might appear, had no temptations for my maſter, whoſe thoughts were turned another way. However, to carry off the chagrin which he could not conceal, he expreſſed his concern in the ſtrongeſt terms at not being able to bear a part in ſo glorious an enterprize, and produced the *report* of the condition of his ſhip, by which ſhe was repreſented to be incapable of ſervice, the reaſon, as he alledged, for his having quitted his proper ſtation. This inſtantly changed the whole ſcene. The Admiral, aſſuming all the conſequence of his unbounded authority, anſwered with a ſupercilious look, that he would order the ſhip to be ſurveyed by the proper officers, and then turned away without deigning to take any farther notice of him.

As this was no more than my maſter had expected, his knowledge of the world, which brought him into the ſcrape, ſoon ſuggeſted the proper means for preventing any diſagreeable conſequences from it. Accordingly, when the *ſurvey* was regularly made next morning, he was *honourably* acquitted; but the maſter of the ſhip was broke for his error, and the other officers ſeverely rebuked, for not having examined his report before they ſign'd it.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions, I changed my ſervice for that of the Admiral's *Agent for his own private affairs*, who directly gave me to the Admiral in ſome dealings between them.

When I enter'd into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was lolling in a liſtleſs manner on a ſofa, in his *ſtate-room*, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fierceſt climates of the Torrid Zone. A gown of thinneſt ſilk hung looſely over his large limbs; the radiance of the Sun was ſoftened by ſhades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept conſtantly wet to cool the air as it entered through them; and every diſagreeable ſavour was drowned in the moſt delicate perfumes.

The contraſt between ſuch magnificent luxury, and the condition of thoſe, whoſe numbers made his ſtrength, ſhewed in the moſt glaring light the infatuation of vanity, in diſplaying ſuch temptations to its own deſtruction, as the moſt implicite obedience to laws could hardly be ſuppoſed proof to.

The aukwardneſs with which my maſter bore his ſtate ſhewing that it was not natural to him, I looked back to his paſt life to ſee by what illuſtrious actions he had riſen to ſuch an exalted ſtation; but to my ſurprize diſcovered that the foundation of his fortune had been no more than a *phlegmatic indolence*, and *ſervility of ſoul* which induced his ſuperiors to entruſt power in his hands, without apprehenſion of its raiſing him to a conſequence that might claſh with their deſigns on any future occaſion.

I ſee you are aſtoniſh'd that a perſon of ſuch a turn ſhould ever engage in active ſcenes, or be entruſted with the conduct of an enterprize ſo oppoſite to his diſpoſition, as to make ſucceſs improbable. To unexperienc'd reaſon ſuch things muſt ſeem unaccountable; but the leaſt acquaintance with the ways of man, would ſoon reconcile you to greater abſurdities. The convenience of the parent, not the genius of the child is in general the only thing conſider'd in the choice of a profeſſion on which the ſucceſs of life depends; and this is the reaſon why ſo few are eminent in things ſo eaſy to be eminent in; and when at length a perſon may have it in his power to quit a profeſſion which he did not chuſe, it is too late for him to chuſe another,

another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what elſe to do with himſelf.

This may remove your ſurprize as far as it concerns my maſter's firſt entering into, and continuing in ſuch a way of life. As to his fitneſs for ſo difficult and important a command, that was the thing leaſt thought of, when it was entruſted to him. The inſignificancy of his character, and his ſervility to his ſuperiors pointed him out as the perſon proper for their purpoſe, as they not only made them ſecure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would alſo put it in their power to arrogate to themſelves the merit of ſucceſs, or lay the blame of miſcarriage upon him; and for theſe great qualifications only did they chuſe him on this occaſion to execute *the deſign of another*, who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of ſhewing that he knew more than themſelves, and whoſe penetration and activity of ſoul might too probably have made him ſee through their deſigns, and puſh matters farther than was conſiſtent with them.

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL's *maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled.*

WHENEVER *England* is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my maſter now commanded was ſent againſt one of the moſt important and wealthieſt ſettlements of the *Spaniards* in that part of the world, not indeed with an ambitious deſign of annexing it to the ſtate, or reimburſing any part of the expences of the war, but merely to diſtreſs the enemy by its deſtruction, and enrich thoſe immediately employed in the conqueſt; the proſ-

pect of which, and the conſequent ſchemes to accompliſh it, ſo entirely engroſſed the attention of them all, except my maſter, that they diſregarded the difficulties, and ran ſo eagerly into the dangers of the attempt, though ſuch and ſo many as were ſufficient to have damped the ardour of any beings directed by reaſon, and not inſenſible to the firſt principle of human action, that his phlegmatic diſpoſition was no impediment to their ſucceſs, as it left them at liberty to purſue ſuch meaſures as the inſtant occaſion ſhould ſhew to be expedient, without the delay of conſulting him. ——— I ſay, " except my maſter;" for not all the cares of ſo extenſive a command, all the hurry and buſtle around him could ever ruffle the characteriſtic ſtagnation of his mind.

He was juſt awoke from his noon-tide nap, when his Agent laid the bag *in which I was* upon his table, along with ſome papers. The chink of the gold inſtantly attracted his attention. " Eh!" (ſaid he rubbing his eyes and yawning) " what is it o'clock?" — " And being told, " Aye!" (continued he, ſtretching and yawning again) " I thought I had overſlept my- " ſelf, I am ſo heavy! This climate is fit for nothing " but ſleeping." ——— Then riſing languidly, What " papers are theſe?" (ſaid he) " Did I not ſay, I " would not be troubled about buſineſs?" " They " are your own accounts, for the *out-ſets* of this ex- " pedition, (anſwered the Agent) which if you pleaſe " you had better look over now, as we ſhall have " others to attend to ſoon. I am ſorry to ſay it does " not anſwer your expectations, but the people al- " ledged that they had been made to pay ſo extrava- " gantly for their *contracts*, that it was impoſſible " for them to ſink the qualities of the ſtores, ſo low, " as to be able to give you any thing on that account, " ſo that all your profit is reduced to the one article " of *ſhort-tale*; and in this too every Captain muſt *go* " *ſnacks*."

" Not able to give me any thing!" ſaid the Admiral, who had been rouſed from his lethargic indifference, by the firſt mention of his own affairs " They " lie, the ſcoundrels; and I'll make them know it.

" The

" The *ſick-liſts* ſhew that they have ſunk them with " a vengeance, and beyond every degree of reaſon; " and if they think that I'll connive at their murder- " ing the men, without having any ſhare in the profit, " they ſhall find themſelves damnedly out in their " reckoning:—And therefore do you go to every Pur- " ſer in the fleet, and bid them to have a *ſurvey* pri- " vately made of the worſt ſtores, to produce when " I call for it. I'll make them *come down*, and hand- " ſomely too; or they ſhall repent it."———

" But, ſir (replied the Clerk) is not there danger " that they may diſcover the affair of the *ſhort-tale*, in " revenge for ſuch an attack; and that they who " made the contract with them may be ſo offended as " to hinder your being ever employed again?"

" I care not!" (returned the Admiral, clapping his hands a-kimbo) " I care not for their being offended! ——— Not I! I don't deſire to be employed. If I " mind my *hits* this time, I ſhall be as rich as the beſt " of them, and will ſtay at home, and take my eaſe, " as well as they: and as to what you ſay of their " diſcovering the affair of the *ſhort-tale*, that only " ſhews your ignorance. They would loſe more by " that, than I ſhould, as they have made every thing " ſo damn'd bad, and are paid for the whole com- " plement. Beſides, don't you conſider whom they " are to complain to? No! No! We ſhall hardly ex- " poſe one another! Things and things hang together " too cloſe for that! One is as deep in the mud as " the other is in the mire."

" But may not they ſpread ſtories abroad, which " may injure your character with the publick?"——

" My character, do you ſay? Not in the leaſt. " Such ſtories affect only the *Clerks*, and ſuch low " people, whoſe *perquiſites* thoſe things are reputed to " be, and who only appear in them; but that can't " be ſaid to injure them neither, for what Clerk ever " had a character that could be injured! Hah! Hah! " Hah! So that your care for character forſooth is " quite unneceſſary! Do what you will, you cannot " ſuffer in that. All you have to do is to mind

" your buſineſs, and when you have got money, no " one will enquire about your character."——

" Then, ſir, I preſume the account muſt ſtand " open as it is, till we go back, to ſettle thoſe af- " fairs."——

" Aye!—Or ſtay! You may leave it with me. It " will amuſe me to look it over, when I have nothing " elſe to do! And you may pay in whatever money " you have got too. I can give you a receipt on ac- " count."——

" That's right, ſir," (ſaid the Clerk turning back, as recollecting himſelf) " I ſhould be glad to know " what *poundage* you will require of the ſutlers for " the proviſions they ſhall take on ſhore. Several of " them have applied to me to know."

" Only twenty ſhillings in the pound! (anſwered " the Admiral) *Cent. per. cent.* on the firſt coſt."

" Perhaps, ſir, (replied the Clerk) You don't con- " ſider that the General will expect *his compoſition* " too."——

" Well! and what is his compoſition to me? Let " them give him as much more if they will. They " can afford it well enough. They may charge as " high as they pleaſe; their cuſtomers cannot help " themſelves. They muſt pay any price, rather than " ſtarve, ſince they have no where elſe to go.

" But you need not give yourſelf any concern " about this. The general and I have agreed to act " in concert, and divide equally between us every " profit that can be made, while we continue toge- " ther, ſo that all you have to do is to meet *his pri-* " *vate Agent*, and ſettle matters with him."

" I am very glad you have come to a good under- " ſtanding with each other!" (ſaid the Agent, apply- ing equivocally to the Admiral, what he really meant of himſelf) " It would otherwiſe have been impoſſible " to avoid diſagreements, as your intereſts would " have claſhed in ſo many inſtances, than which no- " thing can be more dangerous in ſuch affairs as ours, " for fear of improper diſcoveries; but where all " parties underſtand each other rightly, buſineſs goes " on with pleaſure and ſucceſs."

Theſe weighty matters being thus adjuſted, the Agent withdrew, when my maſter walked a turn or two about his great cabbin, and then opening the money-bag, and telling the contents, put a few pieces, *among which I was*, into his pocket, and locked up the reſt in his ſtrong box, after which he threw himſelf again on the ſofa, to reſt after the fatigue of ſo much buſineſs.

You ſeem at a loſs how to reconcile the ſentiments which my maſter diſcovered in this conference, with the luxury and magnificence of every thing about him. But they contradict not each other in the leaſt. In the tranſactions with his Agent, he ſhewed the genuine motions of his heart; but with the other he has nothing to do. They are entirely at the expence of the publick, though in a manner not obvious to every eye, being a kind of tax eſtabliſhed by cuſtom on the *Purſers* of men of war, under the appearance indeed of a *preſent* to their commanders, but in reality as a *bribe* for conniving at their impoſitions; and this tax it is that enables thoſe commanders to live up to their rank, which their juſt pay would never do: a ſtriking inſtance of that wiſe œconomy, which to ſave a penny lays a man under a neceſſity of ſtealing a pound.

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL'S *maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence.*

MY maſter had not paſſed his time long in this agreeable manner, when the officer next to him in command entered haſtily, and told him in a tranſport of joy, that the man at his maſt-head, had *made* the land.

"What land?" (ſaid my maſter, unmoved at the news, or the manner in which it was delivered by the

other, whoſe eyes flaſhed fire as he ſpoke) "What "land does he *make?*"

"The place of our deſtination! (replied the "officer:) I had juſt then taken an obſervation my-"ſelf, and am convinced I am right."———

"Well then (returned my maſter) if you are ſure "it is the place, here are your inſtructions. You "are to lead the van, and cover the landing, about "which proper directions will be given by the Gene-"ral: When that is done you ſhall have farther or-"ders."——Then ſwelling with the thought of his own conſequence, and reſolving to ſupport his digni-ty by an uncommon effort of generoſity, "Has the "fellow who *made* the land (ſaid he) been rewarded "for his news?"

"Not yet; (anſwered the officer) the moment I "heard it, I ran up myſelf to the maſt-head, and as ſoon "as I was convinced it was true, flew to acquaint you. "But I ſhall remember him, when I go back."

"And pray when you do, give him this in my "name," (replied my maſter, putting his hand into his pocket, and reaching *me* to him;) "the men's "ſpirits muſt be kept up. We ſhall have warm work "of it; warm work!"—

"Glorious work! (added the officer) the trophies of "your fame will now be eſtabliſhed in the oppoſite ex-"tremities of the globe. Few attain ſuch happineſs."

"Aye!" (ſaid the Admiral, puffing and ſweating with the ſenſe of his great atchievements) "I have "done ſomething to be talked of in more places than "one. I have endured the ſeverities of various cli-"mates. But we muſt bear every thing in the ſer-"vice of our country! We muſt bear every thing with-"out complaining."

"Have you any farther commands, ſir? (ſaid the "officer) It is proper I ſhould be on board. I ſee "ſeveral of the ſhips have now made the ſignal of "ſeeing land."—

"Nothing more at this time (anſwered the Admi-"ral.) You have your orders, and will take the beſt "method to execute them. If you ſhould be at a "loſs at any time, you may apply to me. I ſhall be in

"my

" my proper ſtation *in the rear*, attentive to every " thing that is doing."

My new maſter on this withdrew, leaving the Admiral to enjoy the contemplation of his own conſequence, and keep himſelf cool till dinner.

If the indolence of my late maſter was inconſiſtent with his ſtation, the activity of my preſent ſeemed to exceed the abilities of an human being. The moment he got to his own ſhip he made a ſignal for all the Captains in his diviſion, and the General, to come on board him; and then ordering his ſhip's crew to be called *aft*, he went to the *barricadoes*, and waving his hat over his head, " Courage, my lads! (ſaid he) the " day is ours. The Admiral has given us leave to " take yonder town with all the treaſure in it, ſo that " we have nothing to do now, but make our fortunes " as faſt as we can, for the place can never hold out " againſt us. The Purſer will give every brave fel- " low a can of punch to drink proſperity to old *En-* " *gland*, and then we'll go about our buſineſs with " ſpirit. We ſhall all be as rich as Jews. The place " is paved with gold, which the lubberly Dons have " gathered for us. Old *England* for ever is the word, " and the day is ours."

This eloquent harangue had the effect that eloquence always has, it tranſported the hearers out of their ſenſes. They anſwered with three chears, which made the welkin ring, and then went ſkipping and dancing with joy to get their punch, a foretaſte of their good fortune, which many of them would not have given up for all their expectations.

As they were going off, my maſter happened to ſee among the croud the man who had firſt diſcovered the land, and calling to him, " Here, ſhip-mate," (ſaid he, giving him a Doubloon) " here is ſomething the " Admiral has ſent you for your good *look-out*; and " take this alſo from me; (giving him another) and I " hope to give you an hundred more for hoiſting your " colours on the top of yonder walls."——

" Aye! noble Captain," (ſaid the Sailor, ſhrugging his ſhoulders, and making his beſt bow) " and ſo I " will, or it ſhall coſt me a worſe fall, than from

the

the main-top-gallant-maſt-head, that is when the ſhip " *takes a heel!* I'll pull down proud *Spain*, and clap " old *England* in its place."

The ſpirit which my maſter ſhewed in every word and action intereſted me ſo far in his favour, that I was pleaſed at his not having parted with me on this occaſion.

By this time the General and the Captains were come on board, and being ſhewn into the great cabbin, " Good news, gentlemen," (ſaid my maſter in an extaſy, ſhaking every one of them by the hand as they entered) " I bring you good news! Yonder is the ob- " ject of our hopes, the place that is to make our " fortunes, and crown us with glory, if it is not our " own faults, for the Admiral has given us general " orders to proceed in the beſt manner we can, and " without loſing time or opportunity in waiting to " conſult him on every occaſion; ſo that if we fail " the fault will be entirely ours, as I ſaid before, as " alſo will the glory of ſucceſs."

This news filled them all with the higheſt ſpirits. They congratulated each other on a ſucceſs of which they made no doubt; and having concerted the meaſures proper to be taken, returned to their ſhips to carry them into inſtant execution.

CHAP. IV.

A characteriſtick conference between CHRYSAL'S *new maſter, and his friend the general. Remarks on war; with the cauſes and conſequences of ſeveral celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to, for courage in ſoldiers and ſubaltern officers, accounts politically for ſome apparent wrongs which they ſuffer.*

AS ſoon as the Captains were gone, my maſter turned to the General, for whom he had a particular regard, and embracing him eagerly, " Now, my " deareſt

" deareſt friend (ſaid he) you will have an opportu-
" nity not only of gaining ſuch glory, as will add
" luſtre to the dignity of your birth, but alſo of ac-
" quiring a fortune to ſupport that dignity properly.
" But what is the matter? You do not ſeem affected
" at the happy proſpect! are not you well?"——

" Well!" (anſwered the General, ſhrugging up
" his ſhoulders) " Yes, I am well enough as yet; but
" know not how long I ſhall continue ſo, in this
" damn'd place, the heat of which ſeems to have ſet
" you on fire."

" Damn'd place, do you call it?" (replied my maſter, vexed to the ſoul at the manner in which the other ſpoke) " It will be an happy place for you, if
" it is not your own fault, a much happier place than
" where I ſuppoſe you wiſh to be, *gaming at the coffee-*
" *houſe*, or *cracking jeſts for your patron over a bottle.*
" But take care! The eyes of all your officers are upon
" you, and if they ſhould obſerve this indifference it
" would ruin you for ever. They would directly attri-
" bute it to want of ſpirit, on the leaſt ſuſpicion of
" which your patron would caſt you off with contempt
" and abhorrence, and never intereſt himſelf more in
" your behalf; and you know with what difficulties he
" obtained this command for you; ſo much indeed,
" that gratitude to him ſhould make you exert your-
" ſelf if you had no other motive, as he in a manner
" ſtaked his character for you. Come! ſtir! You
" will be in no danger. Your poſt exempts you from
" that. All you have to do is to appear animated,
" and alert; and give your orders with fire. Your
" officers are to encounter all the dangers."

" As for the dangers of war," (returned the Gene-
ral, ſtung by the implication in the latter part of what my maſter had ſaid) " I diſregard them as much as
" any man. But this damn'd climate is the thing. I
" hate the thought of fighting with an inviſible ene-
" my, of ſucking in diſeaſes and death with my breath;
" and then beſides I hate all trouble ſo much too, that
" I would this moment give up the proſpect of glory,
" which you ſeem ſo ſtruck with, to be at home ſafe,

" and

" and at my eaſe."—But the proſpect of gain! Would " you give up that too? I have often heard you paſ- " ſionately lament your want of a fortune ſuitable to " your rank, and now you have it in your power to " acquire it. But if you miſs this opportunity."——

" May I never get another!—— No! No! I ſhall " hardly give up that! I will not neglect any thing in " my power to acquire a fortune! But what did you " mean juſt now, by ſaying you'd go yourſelf in your " long-boat to head the men! Sure that is not ne- " ceſſary."——

" Aye! And you muſt go too for this time! There " is no poſſibility of diſpenſing with it. But this will " be the only night you need ſtay on ſhore, or expoſe " yourſelf to any danger. You may go on board every " night after this, and ſleep in quiet and ſafety; for " there will be little or no danger by day. All the " work muſt be done by night."——

" My deareſt friend, and if I may, I will. It is " but ſaying that the night air does not agree with " me, and no one will dare to mutter a word to the " contrary."——

" Come then! let us move! The men will do their " duty with double ſpirits, when they ſee us in earneſt. " I am as deſirous of making and enjoying a fortune as " you can be; but would make it with as much credit " as poſſible though; and to convince you that I con- " ſult your credit alſo, your couſin ſhall go with me, " and give out whatever orders I ſee proper, as if " they came immediately from you. Only do not you " betray the contrary by your inattention. Conſider " what immenſe treaſure there is in the place, and " what a noble ſhare of it will fall to you."——

" Aye! Aye! Let us but once come to ſharing the " plunder, and I'll engage to be as alert and attentive " as the beſt of you all. Never fear me at that work. " No one ſhall get the ſtart of me there. As you " ſay I muſt ſtay on ſhore to night though, I'll juſt " ſee my *night-dreſs* put up ready, to take with me, " with a *febrifuge*, two or three *juleps*, and ſome " *ptiſane* to guard againſt the worſt, and then I'll be " with you; though I wiſh it were poſſible for me

" to

" to avoid going on ſhore this night! There will be " ſuch hurry and confuſion in landing the men, that " I ſhall unavoidably put myſelf in an heat, and that " is very dangerous in the night-air; but I'll take a " purge in the morning to carry it off."——

" Prithee don't think of ſuch things now. Your " officers all expect you, and it is time you were with " them, ſo remember the conſequence, and exert " yourſelf with ſpirit. The ſucceſs of this affair will " enable you to ſpend the reſt of your life as you " pleaſe."——

CHAP. V.

An officer deſires to ſpeak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable inſtance of ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer; with the bad conſequences of a ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the army.

MY maſter then embraced his friend, and each was juſt going to attend the buſineſs of his ſeparate department, when a ſubaltern officer, in one of the regiments under the General's command, deſired to ſpeak with him directly on matters of the moſt earneſt importance.

At the mention of the officer's name, the General ſhewed the ſtrongeſt diſguſt. " Damn that meddling " fellow (ſaid he peeviſhly) what would he be at " now? I ſuppoſe this is one of his romantick ſchemes " to *diſtinguiſh himſelf!* I am not at leiſure! Let him " wait."

" Pray who is this?" (ſaid my maſter, not a little ſurprized at the manner in which the General ſpoke) " And what ſcheme can he propoſe, that ſhould give " you ſuch offence?"

" He is an hot-headed, ignorant fellow; (anſwered " the General) who knows ſo little of the world, as " to think of riſing in the army, by his merit, as he

" calls

" calls it; and for that purpoſe, not content with " doing his duty, is always ſeeking unneceſſary dan- " gers, in order forſooth *to diſtinguiſh* himſelf, though " his own experience, as well as general obſervation, " might long ſince have convinced him of the folly of " ſuch a ſcheme, as he never has been in any action, " in which he has not found means to make himſelf " remarkable; and ſtill ſo far from riſing, he has had " the mortification to ſee himſelf evidently ſlighted, " and younger officers daily put over his head, for " no other reaſon, but becauſe they behaved in a leſs " offenſive manner."

—" I don't underſtand you. What offence can " poſſibly be taken, at a man's ſtriving to diſtinguiſh " himſelf in a profeſſion, where emulation is in a " manner eſſential to ſucceſs?"

—" Perhaps it may in the navy! But ſhew me, " if you can, one inſtance in the army of a man's " riſing by that kind of merit! No! no! our rule is " directly the contrary. A ſubaltern's attempting to " diſtinguiſh himſelf is an affront to his ſuperiors, not " to be forgiven, as it implies a ſaucy deſign of " putting himſelf into competition with them, for " the good opinion of the publick; and therefore ſuch " attempts are always diſcountenanced. If it were " otherwiſe, no man of fortune or intereſt would ever " enter into the army, as he could not think of enjoy- " ing his eaſe, or ſhewing a prudent regard to his " ſafety, on any occaſion, without being liable to " be expoſed to diſgraceful compariſons, by the im- " pertinent aſſiduity, or raſhneſs of every hot-headed, " or beggarly fellow, who has no way of being able " to live, but by ſhewing his diſregard for life, and " all its pleaſures. Indeed poverty may poſſibly ſeem " to be ſome excuſe, for ſuch behaviour; but this " man has not that to plead. He is above want, and " acts in this manner meerly from an ambitious, tur- " bulent ſpirit, that muſt be kept under. You ſeem " ſurprized at what I ſay; but I'll give you an in- " ſtance or two of the effects of this very man's " paſſion for *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, in more ways than " one, which will convince you of the neceſſity of a

" General's

" General's ſuppreſſing every tendency to emulation of " that kind in the army.

" In our laſt attempt upon the coaſt of *Spain*, a " young gentleman of family and fortune took a whim " to go as a volunteer with the General, meerly to " indulge curioſity, and have ſomething to talk of " among the ladies, on his return. As they were " on their voyage, the gentleman unluckily happened " to fall into company, with this officer, who on " hearing him talk away careleſsly, in the confidence " of his great fortune, had the aſſurance to tell him, " that courage did not conſiſt in words; but that " when they ſhould meet the enemy, he himſelf would " give him an opportunity of proving his, by keeping " him company."

" The gentleman, never conſidering that his ſitua- " tion in life raiſed him above emulation with one ſo " much below him, thought ſuch a challenge could " not be refuſed; and accordingly the day that our " troops were beat off, in his way to the ſea-ſide un- " luckily meeting this man, who with his uſual deſign " of *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, had officiouſly drawn up " the company to which he belonged, and which " he had ſo endeared himſelf to by a mean attention " to relieving their wants, when not occaſioned by " their own faults, that they would follow him any " where; and made a ſtand in a place of ſuch danger " that no one but himſelf, would have thought of " taking poſt there, in order to cover the embark- " ation, of ſuch as could eſcape; and remembering " what had paſſed between them on board, would " needs ſtop with him, where he was killed by the very " firſt fire of the enemy, as it was the greateſt odds, " but every one of them muſt have been, unſupported " as they were; though it appeared afterwards, that " had the General poſted a proper force in that very " place at firſt, or even reinforced him, the retreat " might have been made regularly, and the greateſt " part of the heavy loſs which he ſuffered, ſaved. " But that was no buſineſs of this man's; and it was " the higheſt impudence in one of his ſtation, to take

" ſuch

" ſuch a ſtep, without orders, as muſt neceſſarily " expoſe the neglect of his General, and draw diſ- " grace upon him; for which reaſon any General " would rather even loſe a battle, than owe it to " ſuch means, as muſt take away the credit of it from " him, in that manner."

CHAP. VI.

Continued. The officer acquits himſelf of the imputation of ingratitude by a piece of fooliſh generoſity. He perſwades the ſoldier, who had ſaved his life, to quit the army, for an uncommon reaſon. The conſequences of ſuch conduct, with an hint of the beſt qualifications for riſing in the army.

" NOR was this the only inſtance in which this " man's paſſion for *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, was " attended with diſagreeable conſequences, on that " occaſion.

" As he was ſwimming to the boats, (for he had " ſtaid ſo long to cover the eſcape of others, that " when the remains of his little party was at length " broke by the whole body of the enemy's army, and " driven to the ſea-ſide, there was not a boat near to " take them off, ſo that he had no other way of eſ- " caping himſelf, but by plunging into the ſea, and " ſwimming after them) he was ſo encumbered with " his cloaths, that he was in the greateſt danger of " being drowned, which one of his men, who ſwam " better, happening to perceive, and knowing by his " dreſs that he was an officer, he ſaved him, without " diſtinguiſhing in the confuſion of ſuch a ſituation, " who he was.

" As ſoon as the officer came to himſelf in the " boat, (for he was ſo near being drowned as to have " loſt his ſenſes) and underſtood what had happened, " he turned to the ſoldier, and telling him ſlightly, " that it was very well, proceeded to exert himſelf in

" his

" *his uſual officious* manner, in ſaving as many others, " who were in the ſame circumſtances, from which " he had juſt eſcaped himſelf, as he could; while all " his ſuperior officers, who had taken care to get off " in time, were refreſhing themſelves after their fa- " tigue and fright; without taking any farther notice " of the ſoldier who had ſaved him; though every " one thought he ſhould have given the poor fellow a " guinea or two at leaſt, in reward for his good-na- " ture, and failed not to rail at him loudly for ne- " glecting it.

" Beſides the pitifulneſs and ingratitude of ſuch " behaviour, there was another circumſtance that " made it look ſtill worſe, which was that he had had " this very ſoldier ſeverely puniſhed for ſome fault, " juſt before they had embarked on this expedition, " ſo that it appeared like perſiſting in perſonal malice " to him. For he is not ſatisfied with diſtinguiſhing " himſelf only in time of action. Even before the " war was thought of, his attention to diſcipline gave " equal offence, as it put every officer in the regiment " to the trouble of minding matters, which otherwiſe " they ſhould never have thought about, in order to " avoid impertinent compariſons.

" But all the railing of the men and reflections of " the officers had no effect upon him. He minded his " buſineſs with his uſual aſſiduity and ſtrictneſs, nor " ever ſeemed to think of what had happened during " the whole voyage home.

" But this was only affectation, to make what he " intended to do the more remarkable. As ſoon as " the troops were landed in *England*, he ordered the " ſoldiers to come one morning to his quarters, and " bring his wife with him.

" The common motive for ſuch orders was far from " raiſing him in the opinion of any who heard of it. " However, many ſimilar inſtances convincing the ſol- " dier that he muſt obey, they went accordingly; " where after a few common queſtions," " I have " ſent for you, brother ſoldier, (ſaid the officer) to " make you ſome return for the ſervice you did me. " Here is your diſcharge from the regiment. You

" were

" were bred to a good trade, and have had time to be
" cool'd from the follies, which firſt made you liſt in
" the army; and your wife is an induſtrious honeſt
" woman, ſo that there is no danger but you may do
" very well in your buſineſs, to ſet you up in which here
" is an hundred pounds; and ſo take care of yourſelf,
" and God bleſs you."

" Sir! Sir! noble Sir!" (ſaid the ſoldier, over-come with ſuch unexpected generoſity) " I humbly
" thank your honour; but why my diſcharge? I'll ne-
" ver quit you. I'll live and die with you! I'll follow
" your honour to the mouth of a cannon. I don't
" deſire my diſcharge."——

" I don't believe you do!" (anſwered the officer) " nor do I in the leaſt doubt your bravery. But I
" can not have you under my command. Your
" careleſſneſs has often led you into faults, which
" have obliged me to puniſh you, as it too probably
" may again. Now after the ſervice you have done
" me, I never could bear the thought of having you
" puniſhed, and I never will have any man under me,
" who ſhall eſcape puniſhment, when he commits a
" fault that deſerves it; ſo that we muſt part. My
" advice to you, as your friend, is to return to your
" own country, and follow your buſineſs; and if I ſee
" that you make a good uſe of what I have now given
" you, I ſhall be ready to aſſiſt you farther. But if
" you chuſe to continue in the army, any regiment
" will readily receive you."

" No!" (replied the fellow ſobbing and blubbering) " no! ſince I muſt not ſtay with you, I will ſerve under
" no one elſe."——

" Now what do you think was the conſequence of
" this vanity? Why truly, he *diſtinguiſhed himſelf* ſo
" much by it, that no other officer met any reſpect
" from the ſoldiers after, who were continually crying
" him up for his generoſity, to excite others to follow
" his fooliſh example, and throw away their money in
" relieving the diſtreſs of a parcel of fellows, whom
" they have nothing to do with, and the government
" is obliged to take care of, if they were worth any
" care, after they are paſt doing farther ſervice.

" But

" But the General ſhewed proper reſentment of " ſuch impertinence, and put an officer younger by " many years, over his head, to reward the pains he " had taken to *diſtinguiſh himſelf*. No! no! that is " not the way to riſe in the army now a days. Where " a man has neither money, nor intereſt to puſh him " forward, *being able to ſing a good ſong*, or *pimp* " *well*, or *having an handſome wife*, or *ſiſter* with a " proper degree of humility and complaiſance, will " avail him more, than all the courage and conduct in " romance."

CHAP VII.

CHRYSAL'S *maſter draws ſome intereſting compariſons between the land and ſea ſervices, which account for the different ſucceſs in them. The officer is admitted, and put under arreſt for preſuming to do more than his duty.*

IT is remarked that men ſeldom enquire into the cauſes of things continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents that curioſity, which is one of the greateſt incentives to knowledge. They have always ſeen ſuch things; and therefore have never enquired how they came to be ſo. My maſter who had long obſerved the fact, but never thought of the cauſe, was at firſt a good deal ſurprized at what his friend ſaid. After ſome pauſe, " I am afraid what " you ſay is too true" (ſaid he) " and I am ſorry for " it. The ſervice would go on much better if it " were otherwiſe, as you ſee *ours* does, many of the " moſt eminent commanders in which have raiſed " themſelves from the very loweſt ſtations, meerly by " that kind of merit, which you take ſuch pains to " diſcourage."——

" That may be ſo" (anſwered the General;) " but " the caſe of *your* ſervice, and *ours* is quiet different. " Every captain of a man of war, when on a ſeparate

" cruize,

" cruize, acts as a General in Chief; and even in a " fleet, his force is ſo immediately collected under " his own command, and ſeparated from every other, " that it is in ſome meaſure in the nature of a detach- " ment, ſo that in both caſes, he has a right to do " whatever he thinks proper, without danger of giv- " ing offence to any one elſe.

" But how ſhould you like to have one of your " midſhipmen, or lieutenants, running every minute " to you with advice, or preſuming to ſtrike out new " methods for working the ſhip in a gale of wind, or " fighting her in time of action?"

— " Perhaps not very well, without he had before- " hand ſhewed me the advantage of ſuch new methods, " and then I ſhould moſt readily adopt them, without " ever conſidering whom they came from. But indeed " there is a more eſſential difference between your " ſervice and ours, than that you have taken notice " of, which is that every man muſt be a ſtated time a " ſubaltern (a midſhipman) before he can by any in- " tereſt be promoted to an higher rank; which time " is ſufficient for him to acquire a competent degree " of knowledge in his buſineſs, and which time he " can ſcarcely apply to any thing elſe, as from the " ſituation he muſt be in for the greateſt part of it, " (at ſea) he has nothing elſe, to which he can apply " himſelf; and this, and the ſpirit of emulation, for " the exertion of which, their acting ſeparately af- " fords them, as you obſerve, the moſt advantageous " opportunities, may poſſibly be the reaſons, why ſo " many diſtinguiſh themſelves, (if I may uſe the word " without offence!) among us ſo glorioufly, and with " ſuch advantage to their country; while the officers " of the army, for want of due encouragement to " perſonal merit become diſpirited, and indifferent " to the ſucceſs of a ſervice in which they have " no hopes of riſing, by any means in their own " power."

" A ſevere remarker might perhaps account for " this diſcouragement to emulation, and neglect of " perſonal merit in the army, from motives not much " to the credit of the commanders, and ſay that *as*

" *they*

" *they had not riſen by ſuch themſelves*, they looked " with an invidious eye upon them, as a reproach to " their own want of both. Indeed it cannot be juſt " to expect, that a General *who has ſpent his life in* " *paying court to a miniſter, or favourite*, or *who was* " *prefered only for his intereſt in parliament*, ſhould un- " derſtand the *minutiæ* of his duty, and ſee the neceſſity " of encouraging a merit, the want of which was no " obſtacle to his own perferment. — But this is an evil " beyond our power to redreſs, though till it is re- " dreſſed, matters can never go on with that ſucceſs, " which a contrary conduct would make certain.

" However, I think you had better ſee this gentle- " man. Perhaps he may have ſomething to inform " you of, worth your attention. At any rate it is " not proper to throw any damp on courage, at ſuch " a time as this."

The General, who ſeldom diſputed my maſter's opinion, accordingly ordered him to be admitted, and enquiring what was his buſineſs, " Sir! (ſaid the " officer) I come to inform you, that I have diſco- " vered a proper place for landing the troops, which " I will undertake to make good, with only two hun- " dred men of the regiment to which I belong, againſt " all the force of the enemy, if I am permitted to go " directly, before they have time to throw up any " works there."——

" You have diſcovered, Sir!" (anſwered the Ge- neral haughtily) " I do not underſtand you! Pray " when did you make this notable diſcovery?"——

" Juſt now, Sir;" (replied the officer, not in the leaſt diſconcerted at the manner in which the Gene- " ral ſpoke) " the *tranſport* in which I was happen- " ing to *ſtretch away a-head*, I got out a boat, and " have reconnoitred a great part of the coaſt, in the " thick of the enemy's fire."——

—" And pray, who ordered you to reconnoitre in " this manner?"——

—" No one, Sir. I never wait for orders to do " any thing that I think for the advantage of the ſer- " vice."——

—" Then,

—" Then, Sir, I'll have you to know, that no " man under my command ſhall take upon him to do " any thing without orders. He is a good man, who " does his duty; and I deſire no more."——

—" But though you may not expreſsly deſire it, " Sir, I hope it is no perſonal offence to you, for an " officer to ſtrive to diſtinguiſh himſelf!"——

—" *Perſonal offence!* What do you mean, Sir? I " do not underſtand you!"——

—" I am ſurprized at that, Sir! I think my mean- " ing pretty plain."——

—" Sir, I care not what you think; but I'll make " you bridle your tongue."——

—" *Bridle my tongue!* That is not in your power, " Sir; nor perhaps my hands either, at a proper " time. I will ſay what I know to be juſt; and do " what I have a right to do, without being brow- " beaten by any man."——

—" And ſo will I, Sir, do what I have a right to " do; I will this moment put you in arreſt, for your " inſolence, and keep you there, till you have learned " how to behave yourſelf more properly to your ſu- " periors."

The General inſtantly put his threats in execution, ſending him burſting with indignation at ſuch treatment, under arreſt to the ſhip, to which he belonged.

The converſation between the General and the officer had been carried on ſo rapidly, that my maſter had not any opportunity of interfering. As ſoon as he was gone, " I heartily wiſh (ſaid he dryly) this " affair had not been carried to ſuch extremity. It " will have an ugly appearance at this time, and may " be made very bad uſe of, in caſe of any unforeſeen " diſappointment."

" Why! why! (ſaid the General, ſcarce recovered from his paſſion) " How could I help it? Would " you have me bear to be inſulted, and threatened in " that manner, without ſhewing the reſentment proper " for my ſtation?"——

" By no means! When things had gone ſo far, I " do not ſee how you could avoid doing what you " have done. I only wiſh you had treated him at " firſt

" firſt in another manner; and not provoked him be-
" yond his reaſon. I own I have conceived a fa-
" vourable opinion of him. He appeared to be ac-
" tuated by true zeal, and ſpoke with the cool firm-
" neſs of a ſoldier, till he was put off his guard. To
" be ſure there was a great impropriety in his going to
" reconnoitre in that manner, as it may draw the at-
" tention of the enemy that way; but then he might
" have been told of that, without treating him with
" ſuch haughtineſs."——

—" Very true! it was very improper! I wiſh I had
" thought of that! But the inſolence of his coming
" to adviſe one, and preſuming to act without orders
" put it out of my head.——

—" What is paſt cannot be helped now; but do
" not do any thing farther to day, and I'll try to make
" it up ſome way to-morrow, before it can be known,
" or have any bad conſequences."——

The friends then parted, though neither quite ſo well ſatisfied with the other as before this affair.

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up, by CHRYSAL's *maſter, on the General's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an intereſting piece of inſtruction behind him.—Some ſhort but ſtriking ſketches of the progreſs of the enterprize.*

I SEE you are anxious for the fate of this officer. To ſatisfy your curioſity, and avoid being obliged to break the thread of my narrative with the ſequel of this ſtory, at another time, I will give it to you now.

At the inſtance of my maſter, the General ſent the next morning to diſcharge the officer from the arreſt; but he, conſcious of his innocence, and glowing with reſentment for the indignity offered to his honour, re-

ſuſed to ſtir, till his character ſhould be cleared by a court-martial, which he therefore reſolutely demanded, as his right.

This embarraſſed the General not a little. However, after ſome days, when the officer's patience was pretty well tried, and the ſevere loſſes ſuſtained in the courſe of the ſiege, made the worth of ſuch men more attended to, my maſter attacked him, on his *foible*, his principles of honour, and zeal for the ſervice of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the General's making him an apology, for what had paſſed, which, taking the hint from my maſter, he attributed entirely to his apprehenſion of the enemies being put on their guard by his reconnoitring, ſo as to prevent his landing the troops, at that place, *as he had before deſigned*; and to conceal the diſgrace he had ſuffered, he not only expreſſed this publickly, and treated him with an appearance of uncommon reſpect during the ſiege; but alſo on his return home, to avoid ſome conſequences which might not have been ſo very agreeable to him, when the officer, no longer immediately under his command, made a reſolute demand of *perſonal ſatisfaction*, repeated his former apology in the moſt publick manner, and obliging terms, and affected to uſe his intereſt to get him promoted, but too coolly to ſucceed; ſo univerſal was the offence taken at his preſuming to think of *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, by a conduct which gave trouble to his equals to imitate, and *reflected diſgrace on his ſuperiors, who had never practiſed the like themſelves.*

The conſequence at length was, that after repeated breaches of direct promiſes to do him juſtice, he thought it proper to quit a ſervice, in which he had ſpent the prime of his life with credit, but without advantage, in order to ſhew an honeſt reſentment, and avoid the mortification of meeting farther neglect; leaving behind him this important inſtruction, purchaſed by his dear experience, *that perſonal merit is quite unneceſſary in a ſubaltern officer, and an obſtacle, not an aſſiſtance to his riſing in the army.* — But to return to my ſtory.

You

You muſt not expect a circumſtantial detail of the progreſs of this enterprize. The operations of war are too confuſed to give pleaſure to reaſon in the repreſentation, too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I ſee you think this remark too ſevere; but that is the effect of prejudice. When the victories, which have been blazoned higheſt, and reflected the greateſt glory on thoſe who gained them, are ſtripped of the falſe colourings, laid on only to dazzle and deceive, and examined coolly, moſt of them will be found to have been owing to ſome unforeſeen accident, ſome lucky improvement of a blunder of the enemy, or elſe an obſtinate perſeverance in their own, after every boaſted rule of art has been broken through, every reſource of judgment exhauſted in vain; and to have been attended by circumſtances of ſuch miſery, and loſs to victors as well as vanquiſhed, as blaſted every glory, and infinitely over-balanced all advantage poſſible to be gained by them. I ſhall therefore barely touch upon ſuch particulars as may ſerve to give a ſketch of the character of thoſe concerned in them.

The ardour ſhewn by the ſubaltern officers and private men, when they received orders for landing, was impoſſible to be accounted for from any other principle, than *diſregard to a life deſtitute of every comfort and convenience that could endear it*; a remark, which to the humane wiſdom of ſome may ſeem to juſtify the deficiency and badneſs of every kind of proviſion made for their ſupport; while thoſe, whoſe more exalted rank may be thought to animate them with a ſenſe of honour, and ambitious hope, and who therefore do not want ſuch an incitement to deſperation, enjoy a luxury ſcarce to be reconciled with the confuſion of ſuch an unſettled ſtate.—But to return.

The remainder of that, and all the next day was taken up in making preparations for landing the troops, which was affected under cover of the night, when ſome were drowned in approaching an unknown ſhore in the dark, ſome killed by the enemy, and more by their own men, in the tumult and confuſion of ſuch ſcenes.

In the ſame manner was the ſiege of the town carried on, manifold more of the aſſailants falling every hour, by the inclemencies of a climate unnatural to them, and againſt which no proper proviſion had been made, though they had been delayed to meet its fierceſt fury, by diſeaſes cauſed by the badneſs of every neceſſary of life, and above all by the miſconduct of their leaders, than by all the efforts of the enemy, all the arts which the ingenuity of man could deviſe for the deſtruction of his own unhappy ſpecies.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young SPANIARD, *who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter to prefer an extraordinary requeſt. The Hiſtory of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD.

I WAS relieved from the pain of attending to ſuch ſcenes of horror, by an affair that ſhewed in a ſtriking light the force of paſſions more natural to the heart of man.

As my maſter, who was the ſoul of the enterprize, was ſtanding one night to ſee the effect of a battery which he had cauſed to be raiſed on an eminence, that commanded a particular quarter of the town; for not content with performing his own duty in his proper ſtation by ſea, he literally fulfilled his promiſe to his friend, the General, and directed the operations by land alſo in his name; a youth, who had made his eſcape from the garriſon, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though ſufficient to terrify any being capable of terror, threw himſelf at his feet in agonies of diſtreſs.

My maſter whoſe heart was warmed with that generous compaſſion, which is inſeparable from true courage, was ſtruck at the ſight, and raiſing him from the

the ground, bade him declare the nature of his diſtreſs, and expect every aſſiſtance to which he was entitled by the ſacred duties of humanity.

Encouraged by theſe words the youth raiſed his head, and fixing his eyes upon my maſter with a look inexpreſſibly ſupplicating, "O ſtop your fire, gra-"cious Chief!" (ſaid he preſſing his lips paſſionately to the hand that had raiſed him, and on which he ſtill hung) "ſtop your fire in that fatal direction, where "it can hurt only innocence and virtue. That build-"ing, againſt which it is levelled, is not a part of "the fortifications, the deſtruction of which can be "of any ſervice to you. It is a convent dedicated to "the *Virgin Mother of God*, and at this time contains "all that my ſoul holds dear, all that is beautiful and "virtuous under heaven."

Though his youth, beauty, and diſtreſs intereſted every one preſent in the ſuppliant's favour, the nature of his ſuit muſt neceſſarily have prevented his ſucceſs. But an accident ſaved him from the pain of being refuſed, the powder which was to ſerve the guns ſomehow catching fire, and deſtroying the greateſt part of the battery, in the very inſtant he ſpoke.

Not all the horrors of ſuch a ſcene could ſuppreſs the joy he felt at an event ſo favourable to his hopes. "Heaven has interfered!" (exclaimed he, in an extaſy) "Heaven has interfered to ſave her; and man will "not preſume to oppoſe its pleaſure."

The enthuſiaſtick manner in which he ſaid this, ſtruck my maſter. "Reſtrain your paſſions for a few "moments," (ſaid he) till I have leiſure to attend "more particularly to you; and then if you can con-"vince me of the truth of what you ſay, your requeſt "ſhall be complied with. Far be it from me to hurt "thoſe hapleſs votaries of religion. *Britons* ſeek "other objects of their valour."—He then gave the neceſſary orders for repairing the battery, and deſiring the youth to follow him, went on board his ſhip, where he treated him with every mark of politeneſs and compaſſion.

As ſoon as they had taken ſome refreſhment, my maſter made a ſign to every one elſe to retire, and then addreſſing himſelf to the youth in the moſt humane manner, deſired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into ſuch imminent danger in order to prefer a ſuit, of the ſucceſs of which there was ſo little probability.

The youth for ſome moments hung down his head abaſhed, then with a ſigh that ſeemed to burſt his heart, " It is my duty, moſt generous Chief," (ſaid he) " to give you the information you require, however painful the taſk may be to me; eſpecially as " your condeſcending to liſten to the ſtory of my " misfortunes awakes an hope, that you will be moved " by them to grant a requeſt on which depends my " life.

" My name is *Alphonſo*. My father, *Don Pedro*, " bears an honourable command in the forces which " defend yonder city againſt your arms, but glories " more in the honour of being deſcended from the " noble family of *Guzman*, which has preſerved its " blood pure from every debaſing mixture, ſince the " beginning of time in the mountains of *Caſtile*, and " produced a race of heroes, whoſe fame has filled " the world.

" When my father arrived at an age fit to bear " arms, as none of the powers of *Europe* dared to " provoke the wrath of *Spain*, diſdaining a life of " inglorious peace, he entered into the forces ſent " hither to reduce ſuch of the rebellious natives, as " ſtill preſumed to refuſe ſubmiſſion to the monarch " of the *Spaniſh* worlds, where he ſignalized himſelf " ſo eminently, that at the end of ſeven years his " merits were rewarded with a commiſſion, ſigned " by the Viceroy himſelf in the name of the King.

" Such a diſtinguiſhed honour gave weight to the " addreſſes which he had for ſome time paid to the " only daughter of *Don Alonzo Garcias*, who was a " native of *Arragon*, and had been ſent over by the " King to fill the important office of Secretary to the " Receiver of his Revenues.

" From

" From this marriage, ſo honourable to both par-
" ties, I have the happineſs to derive my birth, if it
" can be called an happineſs to be born only to mis-
" fortunes.

" As I was the ſole hope of two ſuch illuſtrious
" houſes, no pains were ſpared to give me an educa-
" tion ſuitable to my birth; the great exploits of my
" anceſtors, the antiquity, and untainted nobility of
" my blood, were continually repeated to me to ex-
" cite emulation, and inſpire me with proper ſenti-
" ments of honour. Such care ſeemed the ſureſt
" means to procure happineſs, but the wiſdom of
" man ſtrives in vain againſt the degrees of fate.

" In the neighbourhood of my father's houſe, there
" lived a merchant named *Don Antonio*, between whoſe
" family and ours there was the cloſeſt intimacy; an
" intimacy mutually advantageous, the countenance
" of a perſon of my father's conſequence being an
" honour to his friend, who never omitted thoſe re-
" turns of gratitude, which his wealth often gave him
" an opportunity of making.

" *Don Antonio* had an only daughter, whoſe
" being heireſs to his great fortune was the leaſt
" bleſſing Heaven had beſtowed upon her! O! my
" *Olivia*, ſhall I ever behold you more? May I yet
" raiſe my hopes ſo high as to think of calling you
" mine?"——

At theſe words a flood of tears choaking his utter-
ance, my maſter took the opportunity to go out, and
give ſome orders to his officers; and on his return, the
youth preceded.

" *Don Antonio*'s daughter and I being nearly of the
" ſame age, the tender connection of infant fondneſs
" grew up between us, and improved with our ripen-
" ing years. The attention of my father was too
" much engroſſed by his military cares to take notice
" of our attachment, and my mother was ſo ſenſible
" of the many perfections of *Olivia*, that far from
" diſcouraging, ſhe promoted it by every means in her
" power, dwelling continually on her praiſes, and ſug-
" geſting to me ſuch little offices of affection and reſ-

" pect as were ſuited to our ages, and moſt likely to " make an impreſſion on her tender heart.

" Nor did the father of *Olivia* (ſhe had loſt her " mother in her infancy) ſhew any diſſatisfaction at a " paſſion which could not eſcape his notice; in- " fluenced moſt probably by a ſenſe of the honour " which he ſhould derive from ſuch an alliance.

" In this happy ſtate we lived till I entered on my " fifteenth year, when my father thought it proper " for me to learn the art of war, in order to qualify " me for ſuch military promotions as I was entitled to " by my birth, and for that purpoſe gave me notice " to prepare myſelf to march with ſome troops, which " were going to reinforce a garriſon, in the moſt diſ- " tant part of the kingdom.

" Though my heart glow'd with all the ambition " and deſire of glory, which my noble blood muſt " naturally inſpire, the thought of being ſeparated " from *Olivia* overballanced every other conſidera- " tion. In the firſt emotions of my ſoul therefore " I threw myſelf at my father's feet, and raſhly " own'd my paſſion, imploring him as he regarded " my life to make me happy in the poſſeſſion of my " love, before he attempted parting us, even for a " moment.

" It is impoſſible to deſcribe his rage on this un- " happy diſcovery. Spurning me from him with his " foot, " Degenerate wretch! (ſaid he, when his " wrath permitted him to ſpeak) " Degenerate " wretch, to ſtain the honour of your blood by think- " ing of an alliance with the daughter of a perſon, " of whoſe family you have no knowledge!"—(For " in all the intercourſe of intimacy, the father of " *Olivia* had never diſcovered in what part of *Spain* " he had been born; nor could the recital of illuſtri- " ous pedigrees, the conſtant topic of diſcourſe a- " mong the noble, ever incite him to an emulative " mention of his own.)———Hence! Fly my ſight " this moment; nor ever preſume to appear before " me again, till you have conquered this diſgraceful " paſſion.

" I knew

" I knew the inflexibility of my father's temper too
" well to attempt making any reply, even would the
" fullneſs of my heart have permitted me. I retired
" therefore without ſpeaking a word, and going to
" my mother, informed her of my diſtreſs, which ſhe
" ſtrove to alleviate by every expreſſion of tenderneſs
" and conſolation, promiſing to exert all her influence,
" as ſoon as the firſt heat of his wrath ſhould be
" allayed, to prevail upon him to conſent to my
" ſuit.

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA's *father is taken up by the inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent, on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing, upon which,* DON ALPHONSO *comes in deſpair to* CHRYSAL's *maſter to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs.*

" THOUGH I received ſome encouragement
" from theſe aſſurances, I could not forbear
" going in the boding of my heart, to acquaint *Olivia*
" with what had happened, but in the moſt delicate
" terms. Her affliction was not leſs than mine. She
" ſaw the ſincerity of my love, and in the tenderneſs
" of ſuch a ſcene yielded to my entreaties, and plight-
" ed her faith to me by the moſt ſacred vows.

" Comforted by the thought that ſhe could not now
" be torn from me, I returned home, where I found
" my mother fulfilling her promiſe, and pleading with
" my father in my behalf. As their earneſtneſs made
" them ſpeak aloud, I could not reſiſt the natural
" deſire of liſtening to a debate of ſuch importance to
" my hopes. She urged with all the ſtrength of reaſon,
" the abſurdity of thinking a family diſhonoured by
" the admiſſion of a female, and enforced her argu-
" ments with the examples even of Sovereigns; ſhe
" inſiſted on the beauty, virtues, and fortune of

" *Olivia*, which made her worthy of the moſt hon-
" ourable alliance; and concluded with ſaying how
" much better it would be for us all to have me mar-
" ried to a perſon, whoſe wealth would enable us to
" ſpend the remainder of our lives in plenty and hap-
" pineſs, than to continue ſtruggling with every miſery
" of poverty, meerly to indulge a falſe ill-grounded
" pride.

" My father had liſtened to the former part of what
" ſhe ſaid with an appearance of attention, but the
" moment ſhe mentioned his poverty, he loſt all pa-
" tience. " Forbear, mean, mercenary woman!"
(ſaid he ſtamping his foot upon the ground with a vio-
lence that ſhook the houſe) " Forbear to tempt my
" wrath by ſuch baſe inſinuations. Did ever a *Caſ-*
" *tilian* think poverty an hardſhip, or put riches in
" competition with his honour? Such ſentiments may
" ſuit an *Arragonian*, but are beneath me. I ſee the
" ſource of the wretch's degeneracy! My blood never
" could have ſtooped to ſuch meanneſs, had it not
" been mixed with yours."——

" Saying this, he flung out of the room, and find-
" ing me at the door, " Mark me, thou diſgrace to
" my blood!" (ſaid he with a look, that appalled
my ſoul) " If ever I hear more of this affair, I ſwear
" by the offended honour of all my anceſtors, to ſa-
" crifice every one concerned in my being offered ſuch
" an affront.

" What I felt at hearing this dreadful denunciation
" may be eaſily conceived. I ſwooned away, nor re-
" covered my ſenſes, till ſeveral hours after, when
" I found my mother weeping over me, in the bitter-
" neſs of reſentment and grief.

" As ſoon as ſhe perceived that I was come to my-
" ſelf, ſhe ſtrove to comfort me, by repeating her for-
" mer promiſes, to the accompliſhment of which ſhe
" was now farther impelled by her reſentment of the
" reflections, which my father had thrown upon her
" country.

" But an unforeſeen misfortune blaſted all our
" hopes before ſhe had time to make another effort.

" The

" The father of *Olivia* having had occaſion to go " to *England*, on ſome affairs in the courſe of his ex- " tenſive dealings, was ſo taken with the people of " that country, that after his return, he never omitted " any opportunity of vindicating them from the inju- " rious aſperſions of thoſe who ſpoke only from pre- " judice, and without proper information.

" This attachment naturally raiſed the jealouſy of " the clergy; but as he confined his approbation meer- " ly to their moral and ſocial virtues, without ever " ſaying a word in vindication of their religious tenets, " they contented themſelves with cautioning him a- " gainſt miſplacing his praiſe, and telling him, that " *there could be no virtue where the true faith was* " *not; and therefore thoſe actions, with which he was* " *dazzled, were no more than ſhining ſins:* And they " were thus mild in their reprehenſion, as he was " remarkably punctual in the profeſſion and practice " of all the rites and doctrines preſcribed by the holy " church.

" But this lenity laſted not long. On the breaking " out of the preſent war with *England*, ſome perſons " who envied the ſucceſs with which his honeſt induſtry " had been rewarded, raiſed a ſuſpicion in the Go- " vernor of his holding an improper correſpondence " with the enemy, to which his former regard for " them ſeemed to give an appearance of probabi- " lity.

" Bold in conſcious innocence he denied the charge, " nor could the ſtricteſt enquiry procure the leaſt " proof of it: But in the courſe of their ſearch a " diſcovery was unhappily made, that involved him " in ruin, if poſſible, more dreadful; a number of " books containing opinions contrary to the Catho- " lick Faith being found in his poſſeſſion concealed " among ſome of his goods.

" In vain did he alledge that they belonged not to, " nor could poſſibly have been known of by him, " the goods among which they had been concealed " having been landed but a few days before out of an " *Engliſh* ſhip, which had been taken by a *Spaniſh* " man of war in her paſſage to one of their own " colonies,

" colonies, where ſuch books were openly allowed " of, and ſold to him unopened, as they ſtill re- " mained.

" But evident as the truth of this was, *the Holy* " *Office*, to whoſe juriſdiction the affair belonged, " would not admit of any ſuch excuſe. They in- " ſtantly ſeized the unhappy man, and hurrying him " away to their own priſon, took poſſeſſion of all his " wealth, and forced his helpleſs daughter into yon- " der convent.

" This misfortune which deprived me of the " wretch's pooreſt conſolation, the liberty of com- " plaining, drove me to deſpair. I pined in ſilence; " and was beginning to meditate on laying down a " life, that was become a burden to me, when my " father calling me to him one morning, " The time " is come!" (ſaid he ſmiling fiercely) " that will " prove the blood of *Guzman*. The evil genius of " the *Engliſh* has prompted them to come, and ſeek " their deaths here. The moſt noble Governor has " not only promoted me this day to the command of " a company in the forces deſtined for the defence of " this city, but alſo in reſpect to my family, has ap- " pointed you to be my lieutenant. Let this arouze " you to a ſenſe of yourſelf! Conſider what you owe " to your country, and to your name! Every feebler " paſſion flies at the manly voice of war."

" Languid as my ſoul was, I could not hear this " news, without joy, eſpecially as it opened me a " proſpect of meeting honourably that death, which " was now my only hope. Accordingly, as ſoon as " the enemy appeared, I courted danger with ſuch " eagerneſs, that my father in ſpite of all his magna- " nimity more than once deſired me to reſtrain a " courage, that aroſe to an exceſs.

" But even death itſelf is deaf to the wretch's call. " Nothing material happened to me, till the battery, " to which I came to you, opened upon the convent, " when the thought of my *Olivia*'s danger of being " buried in its ruins drove me to madneſs. I inſtantly " flew thither, and imagining that ſuch circumſtances " bore down all regard to rules calculated for times

" of

" of peace, demanded entrance to convey the inhabi-
" tants to ſome place of ſafety: But what was my
" aſtoniſhment to hear, the Governor had given the
" ſtricteſt orders, that not a ſoul ſhould be admitted
" to ſtir, committing to the immediate hand of Hea-
" ven the protection of its peculiar votaries.

" Such inhumanity, for I can call it by no milder
" name, broke every bond of duty and allegiance. I
" abjured all farther connection with ſo cruelly inſenſible
" a monſter; and recollecting the many exalted inſtan-
" ces of true generoſity which the unhappy father of
" *Olivia* had told me of the *Engliſh*, I reſolved to
" apply myſelf to them, and try whether I could not
" obtain that ſafety for the beloved of my ſoul, which
" I could not hope from him, whoſe duty it was to
" protect her.

" This, moſt illuſtrious Chief, is the ſtory of my
" misfortunes; the cauſe of that conduct which ap-
" peared ſo ſtrange to you. If you grant my ſuit,
" you will be amply rewarded by the conſcious ap-
" probation of your own mind. You will merit the
" bleſſing of Heaven on your undertakings, by ſparing
" the moſt perfect of its works! And may I preſume
" to add! You will attach to you an heart that is in-
" capable of deceit! Through every viciſſitude of life
" will I attend your ſteps, the faithful ſervant of your
" fate."

The brightneſs of truth breaks through every cloud, and forces conviction. " I grant your requeſt;" (ſaid my maſter with a ſmile of conſolation and encouragement) " The convent ſhall be ſpared. Nor is that all.
" If ſucceſs crowns my hopes, I will alſo uſe every
" means in my power to reſtore your *Olivia* to your
" arms."

The joy which the youth felt on hearing theſe words, is not to be deſcribed. " O generous *Eng-*
" *liſhman!*" (ſaid he throwing himſelf at my maſter's feet once more, and kiſſing them in rapture) " You
" muſt ſucceed! Heaven will proſper every enterprize
" conducted with ſuch virtue."

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL*'s maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation. The only buſineſs of a general.* CHRYSAL*'s maſter performs his promiſe to* ALPHONSO, *into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of ſome* ENGLISH *Sailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

ACCORDING to his promiſe, the next night when the battery was repaired, my maſter gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he ſoon found the reward of his generoſity, one of the firſt bombs which was thrown ſetting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a conſiderable part of the fortifications.

Animated by this ſucceſs to a degree of phrenſy, the beſiegers puſhed on their attacks with ſuch irreſiſtible fury, under the directions of my maſter, (whoſe impetuoſity bore down all obſtacles, and made amends, though at a dear expence of blood, as well for his own ignorance in a ſpecies of war foreign to that which he had been bred, as for that of thoſe whoſe particular buſineſs it was) that *in ſpite of the accumulated havock of war, and diſeaſe, of want, and blunders worſe than all*, they at length overcame the obſtinacy of the beſieged, and compelled them to propoſe delivering up the city on terms, the eſtabliſhing of which was readily agreed to, as *they ſaved the plunder from the ſoldiers for the victorious commanders*; at the ſame time that they protected the perſons of the vanquiſhed from licentious outrage.

The moment the garriſon offered to capitulate, my maſter flew with the news to his friend the General, and embracing him in a tranſport of joy, "At length

"(ſaid

" (ſaid he) the moment is come, that makes our for-
" tunes for ever. The city is our own. Go; and
" exert the plenitude of your authority, in making ſuch
" terms as ſhall enable us to ſupport the dignity of our
" birth and rank, without being any longer obliged to
" languiſh in ſlaviſh dependance on miniſterial favour."

" That I will!" (anſwered the General) that I will,
" my deareſt friend! Doubt not my acquitting myſelf
" properly of the pleaſing taſk! I have been long pre-
" pared for it. It was the ſole motive for my ſollicit-
" ing the command, nor has any thing elſe entered into
" my thoughts ſince I obtained it, but making terms,
" and dividing the ſpoil; that is *deviſing how to ſwell*
" *our own ſhares upon the diviſion.* I have calculated
" every thing to the greateſt nicety, and will ſhew you
" ſuch ſtrokes as ſhall ſurprize you. *The only buſineſs*
" *of a General is to calculate contributions, and divide*
" *plunder.*"

Though my maſter was ſufficiently eager to acquire wealth, he could not approve of the profeſſion of ſuch ſentiments. He haſted away therefore, without making any reply, to the place of action, to be ready in caſe of any accident, never thinking he had done any thing, while any thing remained for him to do.

Much as ſuch ſcenes engroſſed his attention, he did not forget his promiſe to the *Spaniſh* youth, but ordering him a guard of ſoldiers, bade him go, as ſoon as the gates ſhould be delivered up, and ſecure the convent where his *Olivia* was confined, from any accident which might happen on ſuch an occaſion in ſpite of all their care, giving him at the ſame time a purſe of gold, *in which I was*, to anſwer any preſent neceſſities, with directions to apply to him again, if he ſhould have any farther need of his aſſiſtance.

My new maſter did not want to have ſuch a commiſſion repeated. He kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard aſſigned him with the moſt liberal promiſes, flew, the moment the gates of the city were open'd, to the convent, and demanded his *Olivia* with the peremptory voice of a conqueror, where the ſight of the

guard

guard removed every objection, and she was instantly delivered to him.

The meeting of these young lovers was most affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in extasy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fullness of their hearts by a flood of tears.

Recovering himself at length, "Come, my *Olivia*," "(said *Alphonso*, taking her hand) let us leave this "place. Let us go"—

"O whither" (interrupted she, starting wildly) "Whither shall I go? I have no home;—no father to "receive me."—

"My home is yours;" (answered *Alphonso*, embracing her most tenderly) "We will go to the house "of my father, who cannot persist in his cruelty, "when he is informed how signally Heaven has in- "terfered in our favour, and there we will consult "on the means proper for procuring the deliverance "of *Antonio*. I have a protector among the con- "querors, the most generous of mankind, who will "not refuse his assistance on such an occasion."

These words comforted *Olivia* with an hope, for the accomplishment of which though she was indebted to another cause.

The way from the convent to the house of *Alphonso*'s father leading them by the prison of the Inquisition, *Olivia* was so affected at the sight of it, that she swooned away in the arms of *Alphonso*. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarrassment, while they were in the midst of which, a body of *English* seamen, who had slipped away from their officers, and were roving about meerly from curiosity, and without intention of doing mischief, but ready to join in any that should fall in their way, happening to come by, no sooner understood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for some moments as if waiting for the word of command, at length one of them cried out, "Hallo, "boys! What say you? Shall we bail the gentlemo- "man's father? May-hap there may be some of our "countrymen in the bilboes along with him! Damn "my eyes and limbs, but it would be good *fun*, to "set

" ſet them all free! I fancy the Inquiſitors will not " refuſe our bail; if they do, I ſhould be glad to " pick a quarrel with them: I hate them mortally ever " ſince I ſaw them roaſt ſome poor *Smouches* at *Liſbon*, " becauſe they would not eat pork. Come! chear " away, my hearts of oak! All hands aloft, and to " work."

Theſe words were like fire given to a mine. He had ſcarce finiſhed, when the thoughtleſs creatures without more ado ran to the priſon, and while ſome of them were forcing in the gates, the reſt mounting on each other's ſhoulders climbed over the walls

The moment *Olivia*, now recovered from her ſwoon, ſaw the priſon open, " Now is the time, *Alphonſo!*" (ſaid ſhe) " Now is the time to ſet my father free."—

The hint was ſufficient. *Alphonſo* turned directly to the guard, and perceiving by their looks, that they were willing to aſſiſt him, " I go, my love!" (ſaid he) " But where ſhall I leave you in ſafety till I return? " Such a place cannot be fit for your delicacy."——

" Speak not of leaving me!" (interrupted ſhe eagerly) " I will go with you! No delicacy ſhall interfere " with ſuch a duty."——

On her ſaying this, they all entered the priſon, where the ſeamen were ſhouting, and ſkipping about like ſo many wild creatures, and ſetting all the priſoners at liberty, wherever they went.

The ſecrets of this priſon-houſe are too horrid for deſcription. I ſhall therefore draw a veil over them at this time, eſpecially as another occaſion will lead me into the ſame ſcenes again, when the repreſentation will be more intereſting.

No words can convey an idea of the tenderneſs of the meeting between *Olivia*, and her father, whom *Alphonſo* and ſhe readily found out. As ſoon as they had indulged the firſt tranſports of their joy, ſhe informed him briefly how much they were indebted to *Alphonſo*, for their preſent happineſs. Though her father was not at a loſs for the motive of ſuch generoſity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and beſought Heaven to reward his virtue.

" The

" The happineſs of ſerving thoſe moſt dear to us" (ſaid *Alphonſo*, who had not the ſame command of his temper) " is its own reward. *Olivia* and her father " have a right to every thing in my power. But let " us leave this place, the ſight of which appalls my " ſoul. Let us go to the houſe of my father."—

" Lead on, my children!" (anſwered *Olivia*'s father) " I follow willingly; and not without hope " of reconciling my friend to our general happineſs."

When they went out of the priſon, they found the ſailors employed in executing a piece of juſtice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the priſon, without doing or deſigning miſchief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the inſtruments of torture, the ſight of which incenſed them to ſuch a degree, that they inſtantly reſolved to make the Inquiſitors themſelves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehenſive of what might happen, had prudently made their eſcape by a ſecret paſſage, as ſoon as the priſon had been forced. Diſappointed thus in their deſign, the ſailors took all the horrid apparatus, with the habits, enſigns, books, *&c.* of the office, and piling them up in the court, ſet fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three chears for the honour of old *England*; after which they marched off in queſt of more *fun*, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When *Alphonſo* arrived at his father's houſe, he found his mother juſt ſinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, ſhe ſtarted up, and running to him, " O my ſon! my ſon!" (exclaimed ſhe, claſping him in her arms, and leaning her head upon his boſom) " Heaven has heard my prayers! I " am not childleſs, tho' I am a widow." " A wi- " dow!" (exclaimed *Alphonſo*) " Forbid it, Heaven! " O my father!"—

" Yes, *Alphonſo!*" (continued ſhe, raiſing her head from his boſom, which ſhe had bedew'd with her tears) " Your father died, as he lived, with honour, fight- " ing valiantly by the ſide of his General, in defence " of his country. But what do I ſee? (caſting her eyes upon *Olivia*, her father, and the guard, whom her

her ſurprize had prevented her taking notice of before) "*Olivia! Antonio!* —— And who are theſe ſtrange "men? — But alas, I know too well! — O! my ſon, "art thou then a priſoner to the enemies, who ſlew "thy father? — Am I to loſe thee again, the moment "thou art returned?"—

"No, my mother!" (anſwered he) "I am no pri-"ſoner! They are our protectors, given by the moſt "generous of men, who has thus reſtored us to each "other! O! that my father were alive, to make our "happineſs compleat."

"Since Heaven has appointed otherwiſe," (ſaid *Antonio*, going up to *Alphonſo*'s mother, who was weeping with *Olivia*, on whoſe neck ſhe had fallen) "it is our duty to ſubmit to its pleaſure. The cir-"cumſtances of our lives make it improper for us to "think of living any longer here. But that ſhould "not diſcourage us. The virtuous find an home every "where! We will remove to the dominions of the "*Engliſh*, where I have lodged in honeſt hands "fortune ſufficient to make our retreat happy. Un-"der the protection of their laws, a man's mind is at "liberty, and his wealth is ſecure. Mine was my "only crime here; but I was aware of ſuch an attack, "and had removed it beyond the reach of thoſe, "who impiouſly made religion the pretext for depriv-"ing me of it. Were my friend *Don Pedro* living, I "would have removed the objections which his high "notions of honour made to an alliance with my fa-"mily, and prevailed upon him to accompany us."* Theſe words comforted the mother of *Alphonſo*, and made the lovers happy.

Every thing being thus ſettled, the guard was diſmiſſed with profeſſions of the higheſt gratitude to the generous Chief, which *Antonio* and *Alphonſo* propoſed waiting on him to pay in perſon, as ſoon as he ſhould be more at leiſure; and to reward the ſoldiers for their attendance, *Alphonſo* gave them the purſe of gold, he had received from his benefactor, and *in which I was*,

* *The ſtory of* ANTONIO *followed here, but was ſo blotted and imperfect in the M. S. that the Editor was obliged to omit it.*

in

in the diviſion of which I fell to the lot of the ſerjeant who commanded them, who looking upon me as an earneſt of the vaſt treaſures he was to receive as his ſhare of the ſpoil, went away with an happy heart, to join his fellows, who were now in full poſſeſſion of the city.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural conſequences.* CHRYSAL's *maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is ſlammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.*

THE conduct of man in ſuch ſcenes as this, where he thinks himſelf at liberty to follow the inſtantaneous impulſe of his own will, without apprehenſion of immediate puniſhment, ſhews the groundleſs vanity of thoſe, who boaſt ſo loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the neceſſity of coercive laws.

It is true, no people ever abuſed this liberty leſs than the *Engliſh*, who ſcorn to inflict upon others that oppreſſion from which their laws protect themſelves; as on the other hand, ſlaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the moſt imperious tyrants; but ſtill the circumſtances attending even the moſt moderate exertion of it are too ſhocking for diſpaſſionate deſcription, wherefore I ſhall wave the painful taſk.

As ſoon as ſome degree of order was eſtabliſhed in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the ſpoil, *a work for which they all ſhew'd their capacity in the moſt remarkable manner*, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the ſhare of each of the private men, who had literally born the heat and burthen of the day, being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morſel of bread, and not *the fifty-thouſanth part* of what

what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxury, and iſſued their orders from places of ſafety, modeſtly owned to have reſerved for each of themſelves.

Nor was the caſe of the inferior officers, who executed thoſe orders, any better, their ſhares not being ſufficient to defray the extraordinary expences which they had been at, to provide for the enterprize, much leſs the extraordinary expences of living, where the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life were ſubject to the moſt exorbitant impoſitions of an avaricious, and arbitrary will; ſo that all they gained by their conqueſt was to exchange the dangers of war, for the miſeries of want.

This diſappointment of the hopes which alone had ſupported their ſpirits through hardſhips almoſt beyond the power of nature to ſupport, filled up the black liſt of the calamities, which attended this enterprize, aggravating by deſpair the diſeaſes to which the climate ſubjected the victors to ſuch a degree, that their loſs, after their conqueſt, exceeded many times that which they had ſuffered in the ſiege from ſo many combin'd cauſes.

To the truth of this repreſentation, which to unexperienced ſpeculation may appear too ſeverely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army which returned to their exhauſted country, bore a melancholy teſtimony. —— But to quit theſe diſagreeable reflections!

Such a treaſure as I was (a greater much than he had ever been poſſeſſed of before!) raiſed the ſpirits of my maſter, the ſerjeant, ſo high, that he went directly to a ſutler's tent to take a taſte of the good living, which he thought himſelf ſecure of, for the remainder of his days.

On his entering the tent, and aſking what entertainment he could have, the ſutler, ignorant of his wealth, anſwered with a curſe, that he had none for ſuch ſhabby fellows as he, and took him by the ſhoulder to thruſt him out. Provoked at ſuch an indignity to a perſon of his preſent conſequence, my maſter turned upon him, and pulling *me* out of his pocket,

pocket, demanded haughtily, why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another?

The ſight of the gold inſtantly changed the ſutler's whole behaviour. "My worthy friend!" (ſaid he, ſhaking the ſerjeant by the hand) "I beg your par-"don. I actually did not perceive whom I ſpoke to, "I am ſo hurried about. But come along with me, "and I'll make you amends. I have a nice leg of a "fowl which was beſpoke for your colonel; but *firſt "come firſt ſerved*, as the ſaying is, ſo here it is for "you; and here is a bottle of wine as cool as if it "came but this minute from *Iceland*."

My maſter was not proof againſt ſuch an invitation. He *fell to*, without more ceremony, and when he had finiſhed his feaſt, calling to know what he was to pay, the ſutler anſwered, Two doubloons.

"Two doubloons?—Two devils!" (ſaid the ſerjeant, ſtaring at ſuch a demand) "For a leg of an "old hen, as black as Hell, and lean as *Beelzebub*; "and a bottle of rot-gut, ſour cyder? No! no! "friend! no ſuch tricks for me. I am not to be "*flammed* ſo neither."

"Why there it is now!" (anſwered the ſutler, not much pleaſed with my maſter's looks) "The moment "a man grows rich, he grows covetous. I received "the ſame for the other leg of that very fowl this mo-"ment from an enſign, who by the ſame token left "his laced waiſtcoat in pawn for half the money. "But I will not fall out with you for ſuch a trifle, "as I expect more of your cuſtom; ſo e'en give me "what you pleaſe. You can't think one doubloon "too much I am ſure! But you ſhall make it up ano-"ther time.".

Such an argument could not be reſiſted. The ſerjeant threw me down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to conſider how he ſhould lay out to the beſt advantage, the treaſures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between* CHRYSAL's *maſter and two perſons of conſequence lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt.*

I WAS now intered into a ſervice, which opened to me ſo many various views of human folly, vice and wretchedneſs, as made the proſpect painful.

The manner in which my new maſter got me into his poſſeſſion, ſhewed his character in a light ſufficiently ſtrong. But I ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing that with all his addreſs at impoſition, he was himſelf no more than the tool of the impoſitions of his ſuperiors, who ſcarce left him the pooreſt gleanings to pick up, after all their plenteous harveſt: The juſt and conſtant fate of all ſuch wretches.

The continual hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falſely alledged it as an excuſe for his treatment of my late maſter, the ſerjeant, was really ſufficient to excuſe any inadvertency, or blunder, and muſt have cauſed many in any one, whoſe ideas were not ſettled in one certain courſe, out of which it was impoſſible to divert them, of which his cuſtomers, whoſe attentions were not ſo diſtracted, might be apt to take advantage. But I ſoon found, that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having ſuch an invariable bias to his own intereſt, that every miſtake naturally fell to that ſide, for which upon detection his hurry was a ready and probable excuſe.

The ſerjeant had ſcarce left him, when two perſons entered, one of whom I directly knew to be my old maſter, the Admiral's agent for *ſecret ſervices*, as I ſoon found the other to be in the ſame important ſtation with the General.

My

My maſter who was not at a loſs for the occaſion of their viſit, led them into the moſt private place in the tent, and ſetting before them a bottle of *his beſt*, proceeded to buſineſs. " Mr. Admiral to your good " health! Mr General my very hearty ſervice to " you!" (ſaid he, filling a brimmer, and addreſſing each, by the title of his maſter, as he ſhook them by the hand) " Here is a good concluſion of the cam- " paign to us. I was impatient for your coming to " know how I ſhould go on. Here have been ſeve- " ral officers with me already, for credit on the ſcore " of their prize-money, for the length of the ſiege, " and the dearneſs of every thing has not left them a " penny, nor any thing to pawn for one. I have got " as many cloaths, and things of all kinds, as would " ſerve to ſet up a *Monmouth-ſtreet* merchant. If the " place had held out but a few days longer, the poor " devils muſt have done duty in *Buff*. Hah! hah! hah!

" And the propereſt dreſs for them:" (returned *the Admiral*) " Who wants any cloaths in ſuch a climate " as this? I am ſure I go naked half my time, though " I keep under cover, and have nothing to do to " heat me.

" Very true!" (anſwered my maſter) " But naked " and hungry both are not quite ſo well; and when " their moveables were all gone after their money, I " don't know who would have ſupplied them!

" Then let them live on their allowance!" (ſaid the General) " They who can't afford to pay for better, " ſhould be content with that."——

" To die upon it, you ſhould ſay;" (interrupted my maſter) " I am ſure the ſtores laid in are ſuch as " no one can live upon, that has ever known what " living was. For my part, I wonder the contractors " were not aſhamed to ſupply ſuch wretched ſtuff of " all kinds. They muſt have no conſcience at all, " who can do ſuch things."————

" Conſcience! hah! hah! hah! who ever heard a " ſutler ſpeak of conſcience before!" (ſaid the Admi- ral) " And pray, my conſcientious friend, what do

" you

" you charge a bottle for this moſt excellent wine of " yours? ——

For this wine?" (anſwered my maſter, palating it two or three times) " I charge for this wine only *a* " *piſtole*; and let me tell you that is not ſo much, " conſidering every thing. This Burgundy coſt me " five ſhillings a bottle, prime coſt; and when you " compute every expence, you'll find that my pro- " fit is nothing extraordinary; nothing at all in com- " pariſon of what others get.

" No! to be ſure!" (replied the General) Your " conſcience won't ſuffer you to do as they do! you " are too good to a man —

" Too good a *Chriſtian*, you ſhould ſay; (inter- rupted the Admiral) " as appears by your *baptizing* " your wine ſo piouſly! hah! hah! hah! Pray what " did the water coſt, that is mixed with this ſame " Burgundy? I hope that did not ſtand you in five " ſhillings a bottle too? Hah! hah! hah!" —

" It is very well, gentlemen!" (returned my maſter with a ſneer) " You are pleaſed to be merry. But if " I had not ſome way to make out matters, I could " never pay the exorbitant taxes, which are ſqueezed " from me, by ſome people whom I ſhan't name. " And ſo here's my ſervice to you both once more! " When you lower *your compoſition*, I'll leſſen the " quantity of water, and mend mine. Hah! hah! hah!" ——

" And ſo you had need," (ſaid the General) to " make it drinkable: As it is, I wonder it does not " poiſon every one that taſtes it. When I lived at " the *Shakeſpear*, we did not give worſe than this to " our company after they were dead drunk!

" Worſe than this!" (added the Admiral) If you had " given me half ſo bad, I ſhould have broken your " head with the bottle."

" Broken my head!" (returned the General) " fine " words truely! When you were a blue-noſed jour- " ney-man Barber, and uſed to come to me to beg " broken victuals, and bottoms of bottles, you ſpoke " in another tone. ——

" And when I was, Sir," (replied the Admiral) " I had a good trade, and never looked upon myſelf " as upon a level with the Pimp of a tavern. ——

" And yet that pimping made you what you are " now!" (retorted the General riſing up in a paſſion) " You forget perhaps how you begged of me to in- " troduce your ſiſter to the Admiral, by which means " you got into his ſervice! This is a fine return in- " deed. ——

" And you forget too," (ſaid the Admiral ſtarting from his ſeat, and catching at the bottle) " That it " was that ſame ſiſter of mine, who got you into the " General's ſervice, if you go to that, ſo that I think " the obligation is equal. ———

" Gentlemen! dear gentlemen!" interrupted my maſter, (clapping an hand to each of their collars) " Conſider what you are doing! What will the world " ſay of ſuch a quarrel between gentlemen, who " ought to agree like brothers. For ſhame! every " body will laugh at you! come! ſit down, and " be good friends, and I'll try if I have not one bot- " tle of better wine, over which we'll make up all " matters." ——— Then bringing it, and filling his glaſs, " Come, gentlemen," (continued he, ſhaking each of them by the hand) " I'll give you a toaſt that " ſhall drown all animoſity: Here is proſperity to pimp- " ing! It is the beſt trade going, and has made us " all! Aye, and is practiſed too by people in every " ſtation, however they may affect to turn up their " noſes at it. So let us attend to our buſineſs, and not " fall together by the ears for nothing, like a parcel " of dogs about a bare bone. It ſignifies nothing " what we have been; if we mind our *bits* now, we " ſhall all be gentlemen as good as the beſt of them; " and as well reſpected too."

The Admiral and General ſaw the force of what he ſaid and pledging his toaſt, ſhook hands and were as good friends as ever.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life.

"WELL, gentlemen," (ſaid my maſter, who was not pleaſed at their jeſts upon his liquor, becauſe he could not deny the truth of them) "I hope that wine pleaſes you!

"Aye!" (anſwered the Admiral) "this is *the* "*right ſort!* this is *the thing.* Give us this; and "keep the other for officers, and ſuch as are not uſed "to better.——

"And if it poiſons them" (added the Admiral) "the publick will have the fewer to pay. Now they "have done the buſineſs, let them live, or die as "they can, we care not. That's nothing to us.

"Very true!" (ſaid my maſter) "All we have to "do is to make the moſt of them, while they do "live; and therefore I ſhould be glad to know, as I "ſaid before, how far I may venture to go with "them, on the credit of their prize-money; for as "the place was ſaved from being plundered by "the articles of capitulation, they muſt all get mo-"ney on their ſhares, whether they will or not; their "neceſſities are ſuch."

"So much the better for us, who can buy their "ſhares: (anſwered the Admiral) They'll give the "better bargains. Their neceſſity is our gain."——

"Aye!" (replied my maſter) "But I don't find "they intend ſelling. All they propoſe is to mort-gage."——

"Then let them ſee who'll give them money:" (ſaid "the General) "No! no! no mortgages for us. An "abſolute ſale, or nothing. We'll have no after "reckonings; no *over-haling* accounts. As to their "being unwilling to ſell, we'll manage that matter

" with them. When you have got them ſufficiently " in your books, call for your money, and as it will " be impoſſible for them to pay, apply to the com- " mander in chief, who will oblige them to do you " juſtice."

" Why! to be ſure, that muſt do!" (anſwered my maſter) " But how far am I to truſt then?——

" This will ſhew you!" (replied the General) " Here is the rate of all their ſhares. Look at the " ſum total. What noble fortunes that would have " made for half a dozen reaſonable men. It went to " my heart to *fritter* it away among ſo many."—

" This! this the rate of their ſhares!" (ſaid my maſter, not able to conceal his aſtoniſhment, when he looked at the paper, which the other gave him) " Is " it poſſible that this ſhould be all?"——

" Yes!" (returned the Admiral) " and too much " for them too. More than moſt of them ever had " before, or will make a good uſe of now.—

" Why, they'll mutiny, and cut all our throats!" (returned my maſter,) " There are ſeveral of them " who owe me almoſt as much as this already. I " thought they would have had ten times this ſum " at leaſt. They'll certainly mutiny, and cut all our " throats.

" Don't you give yourſelf any trouble about their " mutinying! (ſaid the General) " Do you mind your " buſineſs, and leave us to take care of that. Their " ſpirits will hardly be ſo high! If you have gone " hand over head, and truſted them ſo far, you muſt " abide by the loſs. I thought I gave you a friend- " ly caution about that before.

" And ſo," (returned my maſter) " I am not to go " beyond this rate, you ſay?"——

" Not a penny!" (anſwered the Admiral) " That " is your rule. Whatever you can beat them down " of that ſhall be your own."

" That is deducting five *per Cent.* Agency!" (inter- " poſed the General) " and five, or ten *per Cent.* as " you can make your bargain, for prompt-payment, " for we will not appear to have any hand in the af-

" fair,

" fair, farther than paying you the money. It muſt " not be known that we are concerned in they leaſt.—

" You concerned!" (replied my maſter) I don't un- " derſtand you. Are you to be concerned with me, " in what I buy?

" Not in the leaſt" (return'd the Admiral) " any " farther than by employing you to act for us. You " ſeem to miſtake the matter entirely. You are to " buy the ſhares for us, according to this rate, for " which we will allow you a proper agency: And " that is all the concern you are to have in the af- " fair.———

" But I ſuppoſe," (ſaid my maſter) " I may buy " on my own account if I pleaſe!——

" Buy on your own account!" (interrupted the General) " Such another word, and you ſhall neither " ſell nor buy any thing here. Are not we the Com- " mander's agents: And do you think they will ſuf- " fer us to be interloped upon! You may be very " well content with the profits of your own buſineſs, " without thinking to interfere in our's."

" I aſk your pardon, gentlemen!" (ſaid my maſter, " who knew their power too well to diſpute with them) " It was only a miſtake. I by no means pre- " ſume to interfere with you; and ſhall be proud to " execute your orders, on whatever terms you think " proper. I ſuppoſe though our former *compoſition* is " to end. Proviſions will now come in from every " part, ſo that we can never think of keeping them " up at the former prices."

" Can't you ſo?" (anſwered the General) " That " ſhall be your own fault then; and your own loſs " too, I can tell you. Let proviſions come in as they " will, no one ſhall ſell an ounce here without our " permiſſion, and that ſhall be on our own terms, you " may be aſſured. Our hands are not tied up by " laws. Ours is *a military government*, in which " we can do what we pleaſe without being account- " able to any one. So you may go on, as before.

" But, gentlemen," (replied my maſter) you ſhould " conſider that the whole odium of this will fall up-

" on me, as you do not appear in it, ſo that I ſhall " loſe my character for ever."

" Your character! Hah! hah! hah!" (interrupted the General) " A ſutler's character! I ſhall never be " able to bear the word again! Pray, my good friend, " what character had a ſutler ever to loſe, that would " not be a greater loſs to the finder? Come! here's " my ſervice to you. Go on with your buſineſs, and " make money, and never fear ſuffering by the loſs " of your character. It is time for us to go, and ſet- " tle what taxes we ſhall lay upon the different kinds " of merchandize, that ſhall be brought here. *Our* " *duties* ſhall be paid, as well as thoſe of any king " of them all. This is our reign; and if we do not " make the moſt of it, we have no one to blame, but " ourſelves.

" And as rich as ſo many kings you will be;" (ſaid my maſter) " if you can carry off things in the man- " ner you ſay. —

" As to our being rich!" (returned the Admiral) " that depends entirely upon our own manage- " ment. Our Principals indeed will be rich enough, " which is all they care for; not what becomes of us, " whom they would have do their buſineſs for nothing, " or next to it. But they ſhall find themſelves miſta- " ken. Every thing muſt go through our hands; " and *gold in handling will ſtick to the fingers*, as the " ſong ſays. We ſhall feather our neſts, in ſpite of " them. They cannot do without us; and will " hardly be fond of calling us to too ſtrict an account, " for fear of our telling tales. To be ſure the great " harveſt will be their's; but we will take toll.

" I don't doubt but you will," (ſaid my maſter) " twice over for fear of miſtake, as the miller does. " Why you'll make ſuch fortunes, that you won't " know what to do with yourſelves.

" Never fear that!" (anſwered the General) " we " ſhall not be at a loſs. For my part, I deſign to " buy a borough, and puſh my fortune in Parliament. " That's the genteeleſt buſineſs a gentleman can fol- " low now, and the readieſt way of advancing in " life, and making a family.———

" Now

" Now I think otherwiſe;" (ſaid the Admiral) " and that it is the moſt ungenteel way; ſuch dirty " jobs are required for every thing a man gets, that " it is beneath a gentleman to do them. My ſcheme " is to buy an *Iriſh Peerage* at once, and then live " ſplendidly, without troubling myſelf about any " thing. Or if I ſhould grow tired of idleneſs, go " into Parliament there, and turn *Patriot*, and make " ſpeeches for the good of my country.

" Both your ſchemes may be very good!" (ſaid my maſter) " but my ambition is not ſo high as either, " at leaſt as yet. I will try to get a *Contract*; and " then I ſhall not fear making a fortune ſufficient to " do what you propoſe, or more if I chuſe it; with- " out being ſneered at, for my folly. You may ſay " what you will, but there is more to be got by a " *contract*, than by every other way; and therefore " it is the genteeleſt in my opinion. How many *con-* " *tractors* have I ſeen buy noblemen's fine houſes, and " members of Parliament's eſtates, with the profits " of a ſingle campaign? And ſo, *My Lord*, and you, " moſt honourable *Mr. Member*, I am your humble " ſervant."

" Honeſt *Mr. Contractor*" (replied both at the ſame time) " Yours.

CHAP. XV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſchemes into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

AS ſoon as this worthy pair had left my maſter, he ſet about his buſineſs of preying upon the neceſſities of every one, who came near him, with as much keenneſs as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The tranſactions I now ſaw are a pain to memory. For the few firſt days after their ſucceſs, the officers, under the ſame intoxication with my late maſter, the ſerjeant, gave a looſe to every kind of extravagance, to compenſate to themſelves for the wants and hardſhips they had ſuffered. But no ſooner had they advanced near the limits, preſcribed to their credit, than the whole ſcene changed.

The firſt mention of the amount of their reſpective ſhares was like a clap of thunder burſting over their heads. Their aſtoniſhment for ſome time deprived them of their ſenſes. But when they were able to make a proper enquiry, and found the caſe to be too true, their rage broke through all bounds, and roſe almoſt to deſperation. *The horrors of a jail, the cries of a ſtarving family*, every aggravation of human miſery ſtared them in the face, and made the very thought of returning to their native country too terrible to be endured. But there was no remedy. Thoſe, from whom alone it could proceed, were too much intereſted to liſten to their complaints; and inſtead of preventing, permitted their authority to be proſtituted to compleat their ruin, in the manner propoſed by their agents, ſo that the unhappy victims were forced to ſubmit to the terms impoſed upon them.

The conſequence of this, as I have ſaid before, was, that to drown reflection, they ſpent whatever trifle remained to them on concluding the bargains, which ſealed their ruin, in ſtill greater exceſſes, and ſo precipitated the diſtreſs, they feared.

As for the private men, the impoſitions they ſuffered were if poſſible ſtill ſeverer, (though from their inſenſibility perhaps not ſo ſeverely felt) as the *management* of their affairs went through many more hands, every one of whom had a pull at them, down to the very loweſt claſs of the harpies which prey upon an army, ſo that what remained to them was too trifling to be of any ſervice even to the very few, who ſtrugled with their neceſſities in order to ſave it.

I have not entered minutely into the particulars of this horrid ſcene. This ſlight ſketch will give you a general

general notion of it, and that is as much as an humane heart can bear. Indeed no deſcription could reach the truth. I ſhall therefore only juſt finiſh the outlines of my maſter's character, and then paſs on to the occurrences in my next ſervice.

The extortions to which he was himſelf forced to ſubmit, from thoſe in authority, took off every ſhadow of ſhame (to conſcience he had long been a ſtranger) and added double keenneſs to his natural propenſity to extortion, by giving it what he thought the appearance of juſtice, and provoking him to wreak his reſentment upon others, for what he ſuffered himſelf from thoſe above his reach.

The opportunities for exerting his talents this way were infinite in a profeſſion that is a myſtery of iniquity too complicated to be unravelled, too black to be conceived, but upon experience, which he had acquired to the moſt conſummate degree, in the gradual progreſſion of his life.

A natural ſharpneſs of genius, which ought to have been curbed not encouraged, had influenced his parents to bind him when very young to an attorney, under whom he learned, beſide other valuable qualifications, the nice diſtinctions between law and juſtice, ſo as to know critically how far he could infringe upon the latter, without danger of getting within the reach of the former: But encouraged by much ſucceſs he had at length unluckily happened to go too near thoſe boundaries, and been obliged to quit that profeſſion; after ſome common ſteps of deſcent from which, ſuch as *bailiff's follower*, *knight of the poſt*, and *bully to a bawdy-houſe*, he ſtopped in that of footman to a beau, from which the neceſſary arts of *prevaricating*, *lying*, and *evading diſagreeable demands*, the qualifications of his former character, ſoon raiſed him to be his *gentleman*.

In this ſtation he added to his ſtock of accompliſhments, natural and acquired, *pimping*, *ſervility*, *adulation*, and *an abſolute command of countenance*, on the ſtrength of all which, together with ſome little money, the fruits of his honeſt induſtry, on his maſter's fixing his habitation in a jail, he ſet up a tavern, where his

ſecond-hand politeneſs and *cringing behaviour* ſoon brought him into buſineſs, that enabled him to live better than he could have any right to have expected, and would in time have procured him an independance.

This ſucceſs, which would have ſatisfied a reaſonable perſon, only raiſed his ambition, and made him deſpiſe his buſineſs. Accordingly he commenced *wine-merchant*, as more ſuitable to a *gentleman*, in which profeſſion he went on, *till his one-horſe chaiſe, his country-houſe, and kept-miſtreſs* would have brought him back to his primitive poverty, had not his knowledge of the world taught him how to ſecrete from his creditors, ſomething to try his hand upon in ſome other way, when he pitched upon his preſent occupation of a *ſutler*, in which this account of his life ſhews he was moſt eminently fitted to make a figure.

Thus qualified in himſelf, and ſupported by his employers, he proceeded making his bargains, with a ſucceſs, to which it may be thought no regard to honeſty, no ſenſe of compaſſion was the leaſt impediment. He flattered, profeſſed the higheſt reſpect and attachment, and preſſed his goods upon his deſtined victims, with every inſinuating art, till he got them into his ſnare, when he directly put on all the inſolence of power, and made even ruin ſtill more wretched by the cruelty with which he drove them to it, the inſenſibility with which he treated them after. How often have I ſeen him refuſe to truſt for a glaſs of what he called wine to cool his raging thirſt, and comfort his fainting heart, the man whom but the day or two before he had cajoled into the exceſſes, which drew him into that diſtreſs.

After ſome days of painful attention to ſuch ſhocking ſcenes, I had the pleaſure of being paid away to the captain of a merchant's ſhip, for ſome liquors, which he had the addreſs to deceive the vigilance of the ruling powers, and all their emiſſaries, and convey *impoſt-free* to my maſter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important Cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchant-man. He ſhews another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE care, which I knew to be taken to detect and puniſh this kind of *illicit* trade, made me wonder at firſt that it ſhould even be attempted; but I ſoon found that the danger of ſuch detection, when it depends ſolely on the confeſſion of thoſe concerned, however forceful the means made uſe of to extort that confeſſion, is held at nought by a ſet of people, bred in the groſſeſt ignorance of every principle of moral virtue, or religious obligation, and hardened by long habit into contempt of whatever claſhes with their intereſt.

When I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was going to attend the two *great men*, whoſe converſation with the ſutler, I have juſt now related, in obedience to a ſummons ſent him the moment he entered the harbour. The reception he met with was ſuited to their importance. He was obliged to wait a conſiderable time, before they were at leiſure to ſee him, when being admitted to their preſence, and having delivered in his bill of lading, and *taken his oath*, that he had no *private trade* on board, nor any thing which was not contained in that account; they informed him what *duties* he muſt pay on every article, before he ſhould be permitted to land them.

My maſter, though he was ſufficiently apprized of this before, affected ſurprize, and attempted to expoſtulate with them on the illegality, and injuſtice of ſuch a demand, alledging that the goods had been purchaſed

purchaſed at the higheſt prices in order to ſend a ſpeedy and effectual ſupply to the troops, who were known to want them, ſo that there could be no advance made upon them, which could defray ſuch additional duties; that his owners, not in the leaſt ſuſpecting any ſuch, had given him no power to pay them; and that many of the commodities being of a periſhable nature, muſt be damaged if not permitted to be landed directly, by which means not only the merchants would be great loſers, but alſo the troops ſuffer ſeverely for the want of common neceſſaries, which they could not otherwiſe be ſupplied with.

But all he could ſay had no effect. They did not even deign to make him any anſwer, farther than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leiſure to liſten to.

Such a repulſe, however unjuſt in itſelf, and perſonally offenſive in the manner of it, was far from giving my maſter any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties which it threw upon the buſineſs of his owners, afforded him an opportunity of carrying on *his own private trade* to better advantage, which no oaths they could adviſe were able to put a ſtop to, as an inſtance or two of his conduct will ſhew.

Some ſuſpicion having ariſen of his commerce with the ſutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was ſummoned to appear before the tax-gatherers *to acquit himſelf by his oath*, of ſo heinous an offence.

The ſutler, who knew the conſequence of being convicted, and with all his knowledge of the world ſaw no poſſibility of avoiding it, gave himſelf up as ruined: But my maſter ſoon ſhewed him the convenience of a conſcience trained to ſwearing, for calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and ſeeing him ſo caſt down, "Chear up, brother," (ſaid he) "I'll bring you "ſafe through this ſtreight! By the virtue and "contents of this book" (pulling one out of his pocket, and kiſſing it in form) "I will never ſwear

"that

" that you have bought any thing from me; ſo throw " off that ſneaking, *Tyburn* look, and come along.

Such an aſſurance naturally gave the ſutler ſome ſpirits; though he could not conceive how he meant to make it good; but a little time cleared up the myſtery, and ſhewed him the force of a Cuſtom-houſe oath.

As ſoon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter aſſuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the charge in the ſtrongeſt colours, and adminiſtering the oath to my maſter, demanded in an authoritative tone, whether he had not ſold *uncuſtomed* goods to the ſutler, and to what amount; who not in the leaſt diſconcerted either by the queſtion, or the manner in which it was put, " Why look ye, " gentlemen," (anſwered he, turning the *quid* in his cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the hips, with both his hands) " as to that affair, by the virtue of " my oath, *if I ſhould ſwear that I ſold him any, I " ſhould be forſworn*, and I'll always try to weather " that point, if I can."——

As there was no more than a general ſuſpicion againſt the criminals, this anſwer ſatisfyed the ſagacity of their judges, and they were diſmiſſed with flying colours.

When they were alone, " Well!" (ſaid my maſter, ſhaking his friend by the hand) " I told you I'd bring " you off. Let that be an example to you for the " future. *None but fools convict themſelves*; and *none " but greater fools expect it.* I ſhould have little buſineſs in the merchant's ſervice, if I ſcrupled ſwallowing ſuch a pill as that every day of my life! No! " no! they muſt be cunning if they can make an " oath, that will ſtick in the throat of the captain of " a merchant-man, even if he can't find an opening to " ſteer through, as was the caſe here. We have a " *ſalvo* for ſuch things. *The firſt oath we take as ſoon " as we get into employment, is never to ſwear the " truth to a Cuſtom-houſe-officer, while we live; ſo " that all the oaths they give us go for nothing.*"

But with all his cleverneſs, he ſometimes failed of ſucceſs. A lieutenant of a man of war happening as he

he was *rowing guard* one night to ſee a boat put off from our ſhip, purſued it in hopes of making ſome repriſals for all the extortions he and his brethren daily ſuffered from every one concerned in trade, as he knew it muſt be a *ſmuggler*.

The hope of prize made the crew of the lieutenant's boat pull with ſuch ſpirit, that they gained faſt upon the *chace*, which the others ſeeing, and that it was impoſſible for them to get clear off, they threw their cargoe over-board to diſappoint their purſuers of their expected booty, and then ran the boat a-ſhore to ſave themſelves from being taken, leaving her of courſe to the captors for their trouble, who towed her away in triumph.

The chief of the ſmugglers was my maſter's ſon, who in the account he gave him of the affair on his return, was proceeding to tell him the names of thoſe who had been with him, when the father ſtopping him ſhort, "Avaſt!" (ſaid he) "Coil up your tongue. "I deſire to hear no more of them. Have you a "mind to make me forſwear myſelf when I go to "recover my boat? For have her again you know I "muſt, as I can't get another here, nor carry on any "buſineſs without one."——

Accordingly next morning he made a publick enquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been ſtolen from his ſhip's ſide, and finding her in the poſſeſſion of the lieutenant, demanded to have her reſtored directly, and on his refuſal had him ſummoned before the officers of the cuſtoms, who were judges in ſuch affairs.

As he grounded his claim on her having been taken without his privity, and by perſons unknown to him, he was put to the common teſt of an oath, Whether he knew who had been in her, when ſhe was purſued by the captors. "By the virtue of *my oath*, Gentle-"men" (anſwered he without the leaſt heſitation) "*I do not know one of them.*"

So *direct* an anſwer ſatisfied the judges, who were no ways concerned in the affair; but that was not the caſe with the lieutenant: "Hold, Sir!" (ſaid he to my

my maſter, who was ſheering off, laughing in his ſleeve) "What is that you ſay?"——

"I ſay," (anſwered my maſter, nothing diſconcerted) "That I don't know *one* of them."——

"*One of them!*" (returned the lieutenant, who inſtantly ſaw through his evaſion) "But don't you "know *any* of them though? Take care what you "ſay! Perhaps I know more than you think I do!"—

"Why as to that" (replied my maſter laughing) "I cannot ſay ſo much. Perhaps I may know ſome "of them."——

"How!" (interpoſed the judge, offended at an anſwer, which he thought ſhewed a ſlight to his authority) "Did you not ſwear this moment, that "you did not know one of them?"——

"No more do I!" (anſwered my maſter) There "were twelve in the boat, of whom I know only "eleven; and ſure in that caſe, I can ſafely ſwear I "do not know *one*, that is *the twelfth* of them. Hah! "hah! hah!"——

"Take care, Sir, (replied the judge) how you at"tempt to trifle in this manner before us again. "You know the puniſhment of perjury, if you ſhould "be caught tripping."——

"Never fear!" (ſaid my maſter) "I know the "*compaſs* of my conſcience too well for that. I can "ſteer as near that wind as another. *Thus! thus!* "*and no nearer*, is my trim. I'll never break an oath; "but if I can give it the *go by*, at the *lee-ſide* thus, "by a double-meaning, I hope that's no offence."—

Then turning to the lieutenant, "Well, Sir!" (continued he) "it ſeems *you have carried too much* "*ſail for me this trip! But if I meet you upon a wind* "*again, mind your helm, or I may chance to fall* "*aboard you.* However, ſince I can't have my boat "cheaper, I muſt e'en come to your terms, ſo what "do you aſk for her?"——

To this propoſal the lieutenant made no objection: Setting therefore his price, "Zouns!" (ſaid my maſter) "I believe you have no conſcience at all, to aſk "a man ſo much, and for his own boat!"——

At

At his mentioning *conſcience*, all preſent ſet up a loud laugh, and repeated the word.

Nothing abaſh'd at which, " You may laugh as " much as you pleaſe (continued he) but my notion " of conſcience is not to aſk out of reaſon, for any " thing one has to diſpoſe of; and ſo, Sir, if you " have a mind to part with the boat, I'll give you " half what you aſk; and I ſhould think even that too " much, but that I want her, and do not know where " to get another."

" And as I want to ſell her, and do not know where " to get another purchaſer!" (anſwered the lieute- " nant) " you ſhall have her. Not that I think ſhe " comes very cheap to you upon the whole neither! " You have ſworn well for her at leaſt."

" As to that matter," (replied my maſter) " that " is my buſineſs, and not yours. Here is your mo- " ney; and that is all you need care for."——Saying " this, he paid him for the boat, and then walked " off, without concern or ſhame.——I here quitted " his ſervice, of which I was heartily tired, and en- " tered into that of the lieutenant.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.*

I SEE you are ſhocked at ſuch flagrant inſtances of profligacy, of bare-faced contempt of every thing moſt ſacred, and important. They certainly are a reproach to human nature; but that reproach muſt not be confined to thoſe alone, who obviouſly incur it. They who from falſe principles of policy give

give the occaſion, againſt the conviction of reaſon and experience, are at leaſt equally guilty.

The impotency of man to reſiſt temptation is ſuch that he is taught to pray againſt it! Why then ſhould thoſe, who are entruſted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourſe of life, lay ſnares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding?

Appealing to the atteſtation of the Deity, is moſt certainly the higheſt aſſurance poſſible to be given by any being, who has a ſenſe of his dependance on that Deity; nor ſhould ever be given but on the moſt important occaſions, and in the moſt ſolemn manner; nor accepted but from ſuch as may be preſumed to underſtand the nature of it.

In ſuch circumſtances it would never be violated. Man is not ſo deſperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inexplicable perdition. But when that atteſtation is given lightly, for every trifle, when it is placed in oppoſition to intereſt, and demanded from ſuch as cannot be ſuppoſed to know its conſequence, the reverence which ſhould be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and of courſe, the end, for which it is thus impiouſly, and injudiciouſly proſtituted, diſappointed; and by that means the moſt ſacred aſſurance of life rendered void, the bond of ſocial confidence and ſafety broken.

The effects of this abſurd policy of making the obligations of Religion the common teſt of truth on trivial occaſions, and where intereſt is concerned, are more extenſive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engroſs the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them ſee the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reaſon; wherefore the threats and promiſes of Religion were found neceſſary to enforce the practice of it: But as the accompliſhment of thoſe is placed at a diſtance, when they interfere with preſent enjoyments, their force wears off, the threats loſe their terrors, and the promiſes are ſlighted by thoſe, who look no farther than the inſtant moment; and this is the great ſource of that immortality and irreligion ſo prevalent in life,

and

and which will never be corrected, *till legiſlators make oaths leſs common, prevent their interfering with the ſwearer's own intereſt*, (as in the inſtances which gave occaſion to theſe reflections) *explain their nature before they are adminiſtered, and inflict inſtant puniſhment on their violation.*

My new maſter had but juſt returned on board, when the captain received orders to go, and aſſiſt the operations of the war, in another part of the world. The news raiſed every one's ſpirits. The ſight of a place in which moſt of them had been guilty of exceſſes, which drew them into diſtreſs, and where all had been ſo wretchedly diſappointed, was neceſſarily diſagreeable; and conſequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from ſuch reflections, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the ſame manner as the former, gave them pleaſure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ſhip, ſo very different from what I had ſeen in others, as to ſtrike me with an agreeable ſurprize. But I was not long at a loſs for the reaſon. As ſoon as the ſhip was under ſail, the captain ſummoned all his officers into the great cabbin, and after ſome general inſtructions about their duty, "Gentle-" men," (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ſhip) "as we have never ſailed together before, I muſt " deſire your attention to a few hints, which I al-" ways take the liberty to give, in ſuch circumſtan-" ces.

"We are now ſhut up together in a priſon, where " the unavoidable inconveniences of our ſituation " make all our care neceſſary to prevent its becoming " inſupportable to us. For this reaſon, the firſt thing " I recommend to you is, *not to game.* Beſide the " danger of diſagreement when the paſſions are agi-" tated by the viciſſitudes of play, our pay is ſcarce " ſufficient for our ſupport, ſo that the leaſt loſs muſt " be diſtreſſing, the conſequence of which muſt be " general unhappineſs, for who can ſee his companion " miſerable, without ſharing in his miſery?

" There

" There is another thing, againſt which, though " not commonly conſidered in this light, I muſt " earneſtly caution you, as inevitably throwing a gloom " over that chearfulneſs of mind, which is the great- " eſt happineſs of life, and to us muſt ſupply the place " of every other happineſs, and this is *the vice of* " *profane curſing and ſwearing*, to the reproach of our " ſervice too prevalent among us.

" There is no man, however hardened in this de- " teſtable habit, but knows it to be a crime, and " feels a check from within every time he is guilty of " it, the repetition of which ſelf accuſation ſours his " temper, and makes him diſſatisfied with himſelf, " and every perſon and thing about him. For the " truth of this I appeal to unvaried experience. Who " ever ſaw a man ſerenely chearful, that was addicted " to this vice? (I might ſay indeed to any vice, but " as our ſituation precludes us from the practice of " moſt others, I mention theſe only, into which we " may fall) for occaſional mirth is a very different " thing, and too often leads into conſequences de- " ſtructive of ſerenity of mind, eſpecially when it is " raiſed by means inconſiſtent with virtue.

" I do not ſpeak of the effect, which the practice " of virtue has upon our reſolution. The courage " of a *Briton* can never be doubted; but ſtill there is " as much difference between that of a virtuous, and " a vicious man, as of the ſame perſon when ſober, " or intoxicated with liquor. The former is uniform, " ſteady, and attentive to improve every advantage, " or remedy any misfortune; the other boiſterous, " headlong, and blinded with paſſion; for paſſion only " can make a man face death, who in the cool mo- " ments of reflection is afraid to die. In a word, " one is the courage of a man, the other the raſhneſs " of a brute.

" Againſt theſe two things therefore, *gaming* and " *ſwearing*, I take the liberty to caution you, as a " friend, who is ſincerely deſirous of your welfare; " but there is another vice, in reſpect to which I do " not think myſelf obliged to obſerve the ſame deli- " cacy; and this is *drunkenneſs*, which is liable to be

" attended

" attended with ſuch dangerous conſequences in our " ſituation in particular, for I think it unneceſſary to " mention any other, that I ſhall ever exert all the " authority entruſted to me to ſuppreſs it, and there- " fore it is but juſt for me to declare, that no officer, " who is once guilty of it under my command, ſhall " ever do duty under me more.

" This, gentlemen, is what I had to ſay to you. " The obſervation of theſe few hints will make us " happy among ourſelves, and reſpected by our men, " without which it is impoſſible for us to be well " obeyed by them; for heedleſs and profligate as they " may appear, they are the ſevereſt criticks on the " conduct of their officers, and not only like people " in higher ſtations, revere the virtues which they " have not reſolution to imitate; but alſo actually do " imitate them in a great degree."

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL's *maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.*

I HAVE already taken notice of the effect, which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the ſhip. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleaſure; but though all paid due reſpect to what he ſaid, it was impoſſible to work ſuch an inſtantaneous reformation, but that ſome of them would now and then jeſt among themſelves upon his conduct, as from compariſon with that of others of his rank, inconſiſtent with his character; and in other reſpects indulge in the levities of diſcourſe and behaviour too

general

general among perſons not much accuſtomed to the rules of rational converſation.

But whatever allowances the circumſtances of their education might claim for ſuch ſallies in the officers, the perſon who tranſgreſſed moſt was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically ſanctified, ran into the oppoſite extreme.

The ſelfiſh vanity of man always takes pleaſure in ſeeing any perſon debaſe himſelf, by acting beneath his character, eſpecially if that character is ſuch as appears to be placed in a more reſpectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ſhip, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleaſed with this proſtitution, which he, by a common miſtake of ridicule for applauſe, gave ſtill farther into, *imagining they laughed with him*, when in reality, *they laughed at him.*

But my maſter beheld the matter in another light; and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themſelves in the ward-room, "I have "obſerved with much concern, Sir," (ſaid he) "that "you are falling into an error, which I have known "prove fatal to many gentlemen of your profeſſion. "This is departing from your character, in order to "accommodate yourſelf to what you think the hu"mour of your company. Believe me, Sir, no man "ever did ſo, who did not immediately fall into con"tempt, with the very people, whoſe approbation he "ſtrove to purchaſe at ſo dear a rate. The greateſt "libertine deſpiſes a clergyman, who is a libertine; "and the reaſon is plain, *You are ſet apart from the "reſt of mankind to perform the rites of Religion, and "inculcate virtue by your precepts and example; and "for this you are paid by the publick, who expect that "you ſhould earn your wages, by doing your duty; and "look upon thoſe who do not, as no better than cheats.*" This may appear an odd way of ſpeaking; but it is "true nevertheleſs.

"On the other hand, where a clergyman fulfills "his duty, and enforces his preaching by his practice,

"though

" though he may not abſolutely reform all thoſe with " whom he converſes, yet he will certainly work this " good effect, that he will keep them in awe, and " prevent their running into outrageous lengths of " wickedneſs, at leaſt in his preſence. For whatever " people may inconſiderately imagine, *no man ever* " *acted in character, who was not reſpected; no man* " *ever acted out of character, who was not deſpiſed.*

" Do but reflect a moment, in what light you your- " ſelf would look upon a lady, who ſhould ſpeak ob- " ſcenely, ſwear, drink, and talk of fighting, and it " will ſhew you the juſtice of this remark. For what " makes theſe vices ſo particularly hateful in a woman, " is not any thing in their nature particularly con- " tradictory to the ſex, more than ours, but becauſe " they are contrary to her character.

" I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to you in this " free manner, in reſpect to your conduct, which I " am ſenſible concerns only yourſelf; but as the er- " rors you have fallen into appear to have ariſen mere- " ly from inadvertency, and miſtake, I think it my " duty to caution you againſt the danger of them, " particularly in your preſent ſituation, with which I " have had the opportunity of being much better ac- " quainted, than you poſſibly can be. I was in the " ſervice long, very long, before you were born; and " have been intimate with many chaplains, but never " knew one who proſtituted his character to humour " his company, who was not neglected by them, when " they had it in their power to have ſerved him; as " on the contrary, I have known many inſtances of " thoſe who have reaped the happy fruits of a regular, " and virtuous conduct, by which they acquired an " eſteem, that proved the foundation of their fortune; " and if all have not been equally ſucceſsful, their " diſappointment muſt be attributed to ſome other " cauſe.

" I would not by this be underſtood to adviſe you " to a moroſe diſtance, and ſtiffneſs of behaviour, or " aſperity of reproof upon every occaſion. They ſel- " dom, if ever, do good, in any ſituation; in yours

" they

" they will certainly do hurt, by piquing falſe pride " to act in oppoſition to them, without regard to the " conſequences. An obliging temper, and uniformly " decent conduct lead inſenſibly to imitation, where " contradiction or direct admonition would be held " impertinent. Theſe hints are ſo obvious, that they " may ſeem unneceſſary; but it is want of attention " to them which has made ſo many chaplains, miſcarry " in life, and indeed has brought the very character " into diſrepute."

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good ſenſe, nor virtuous inclination, was ſtruck with the juſtice and force of this rebuke. He thanked my maſter in the moſt ingenuous manner, and promiſed to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at firſt naturally expoſed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my maſter took his part, and ſhewed them the injuſtice of ſuch behaviour, it ſoon wore off, and he had the heart-felt ſatisfaction to find himſelf treated with friendly reſpect and confidence by thoſe, whoſe groſs familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes true compaſſion; and ſhews the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.*

AS the captain maintained the moſt friendly intercourſe with his officers, he ſoon obſerved that my maſter laboured under ſome heavy diſtreſs of mind. This naturally raiſed his compaſſion, and *as real compaſſion never ſees diſtreſs, which it is not deſirous of*

of alleviating, he frequently took occaſion, when they were by themſelves, to turn his diſcourſe upon ſuch ſubjects as he thought might lead him to open himſelf; but finding that modeſty, or a reſerve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and obſervation that *the knowledge of a man's being in diſtreſs always ſinks him in the eſteem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of ſervice from him, and alarming their apprehenſions of his expecting aſſiſtance from them*, prevented his taking the hint, he reſolved to break through forms, and aſk him directly.

Seeing him therefore one day walking the quarter-deck, in a mood of deepeſt melancholy, he called him into the great-cabbin, and deſiring him to ſit down, after a little general chat, "I fear, Sir," (ſaid he) "that ſomething hangs upon your ſpirits. If it is "proper to be communicated, let me know what it "is, and depend upon every aſſiſtance in my power to "make you eaſy. I aſk not from idle, or impertinent "curioſity."

"Sir," (anſwered my maſter, ſtruck with the manner in which he ſpoke) "I believe you above the in-"fluence of ſuch motives, and ſhall therefore obey "your kind commands without ſcruple. It is too "true, that I am unhappy; and I fear my unhappi-"neſs is too common. I have devoted my life to a "profeſſion in which I have ſerved my country above "forty years with fidelity; and I will take the liberty "to ſay with ſome ſucceſs: And now when my con-"ſtitution is broken with wounds, fatigue, and "change of climates, when nature calls for reſt, and "refreſhment, the only reward I have to expect is "poverty, and its inſeparable attendant, contempt. "This, Sir, is the cauſe of my unhappineſs; and ſuch "a cauſe, as I believe you will think it to be a juſt "one."

"Very true, Sir," (replied the captain) it is a juſt "one; and what muſt affect every man of ſpirit, and "a generous way of thinking. But you ſhould not "yield to it too far! You are ſtill in the vigour of "life; and while the war continues ſhould look for-

"ward

" ward with hope. Though you have been unſucceſs-
" ful hitherto, fortune may prove more kind."

" Alas, Sir," (returned my maſter) " I have been
" ſo long cheated by hope, that I now deteſt it.
" When I came out upon this laſt expedition, our
" force made me ſo confident of ſucceſs, and I was ſo
" well acquainted with the wealth in the place, that
" I unhappily gave way to hope, and ran into expences,
" which though far from being unneceſſary, were im-
" prudent, and threaten now to involve me in ruin,
" on my return home, as it has been thought proper
" by our ſuperiors to rate our ſervice in the conqueſt,
" at ſo low a price."

" If that is the caſe then!" (ſaid the captain) " do
" not return till matters mend. Whenever I am or-
" dered home, I'll take care to get you removed into
" another ſhip. Your ſtaying abroad on ſuch an ac-
" count is not inconſiſtent with the ſtricteſt honour,
" as you do it with an intention truly honeſt.

" Dear, Sir," (anſwered my maſter) " that is very
" true. But I am precluded even from the wretched
" relief of a voluntary exile. I have a wife, and
" children at home, the apprehenſion of whoſe diſ-
" treſſes drives me to deſpair. It was to cloath and
" ſettle them in a little habitation, where they might
" enjoy the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life with ſome
" degree of comfort, that I anticipated my ſucceſs,
" in the manner I mentioned; and now as that ſucceſs
" has fallen ſo far ſhort of what I thought juſt expec-
" tation, all the former ſavings of my life (ſavings from
" the very neceſſities of nature) will be torn away,
" by the rapacious hands of mercileſs creditors, to
" make up the deficiency in the articles bought of
" themſelves to diſcharge their demands, and my
" wretched family thrown upon the unfriendly world,
" without its being in my power to aſſiſt them. I
" muſt therefore return, and go into a jail to prevent
" their ſtarving in the ſtreets. What affected myſelf
" only, honeſt indignation enabled me to ſupport. I
" have ſeen boys, whoſe ignorance I deſpiſed, and
" men whoſe principles I deteſted, preferred to com-
" mand, while my ſervices were over-looked; but as

" I had not the intereſt of the former, nor the *modiſh* " *merit* of the latter, I bore my fate with patience. " But to have thoſe dearer to me than life expoſed to " miſery, is more than I can bear."——

" Nor ſhall you bear it!" (replied the captain, who had feigned to cough to hide the ſympathetick tear, that gliſtened in his eye) " Nor ſhall you bear " it. How much is the debt, that alarms you? I " will advance it for you directly; and not that only, " I will take upon me to make your merit (to which " I am no ſtranger) known to your ſuperiors, in ſuch " a light as ſhall not fail of juſt reward."

" O Sir!" (returned my maſter, as ſoon as the fullneſs of his heart gave him utterance) " How can I " ſubmit to obligations, to which it is impoſſible I " ſhould ever make any return?"——

" All the return I deſire" (anſwered the captain) " is your friendſhip. Speak! how much do you want? " The Packet is yet in ſight. I will order a ſignal " to be made for her, and give you a draught upon " my agent."——

" Good Heaven!" (exclaimed my maſter) " Can " there be ſuch virtue in man?"——

" Come! what is the ſum?" (interrupted the captain, who wanted to ſhorten a converſation, that began to be too affecting to him) " I ſhall think you " doubt my ſincerity if you heſitate to accept of my " friendſhip."——

" Such a doubt" (returned my maſter, whoſe heart a guſh of tears had lightened) " would be a blacker " crime, than ever ſtained my ſoul! No! I receive " your beneficence with humble gratitude, as from " the hand of Heaven, nor will mention any other " return, but what muſt be made to that, till it ſhall " be pleaſed to bleſs me with better ability."

Then pulling out his pocket-book, " Here is the " account of what I owe" (continued he, giving him ſome papers, and a purſe containing little more than his ſhare of the price of the ſmuggler's boat:) " And " here is all my worldly wealth, which is no more than " an aſſignment of my miſerable prize-money, and theſe " few pieces of gold, thrown by fortune in my way,

" moſtly

" moſtly ſince our hands were tied up by the capitu-
" lation. For the ballance I muſt be your debtor."

" For the ballance!" (anſwered the captain, returning the purſe, and the aſſignment) " No! you " ſhall be my debtor (if you will call it ſo!) for the " whole. It would be ſtrange friendſhip to ſtrip you " of every thing. You may want yourſelf."——

" Excuſe me, Sir," (interrupted my maſter, unable to ſuppreſs the delicacy, the dignity of honour) " I " am not ſo low a wretch, as to accept of more than " I indiſpenſibly want; and that for perſons dearer to " me than myſelf. If you will not permit me to " make the debt as light as I can, it is impoſſible for " me to receive your friendſhip, however eſſential to " the happineſs of my heart. I am ſorry you ſhould " have entertained ſo mean an opinion of me."——

" I have the higheſt opinion of you!" (replied the captain, who ſaw what pain he had given him) " and " ſpoke in the warmth of my regard, without the moſt " diſtant deſign of giving you offence. But you ſhall " make your own terms, on this condition though, " that if you have any occaſion for money, you will " apply to me with the freedom of a friend."

To ſuch a propoſal, it was impoſſible to refuſe aſſenting. My maſter complied, and the captain taking the money, *&c.* from him, deſired that he would order a ſignal to be made for the Pacquet, and write his letters, while he himſelf ſhould draw a bill upon his agent.—The ſentiments expreſſed by the captain made it a pleaſure to me to paſs into his ſervice on this occaſion.

As ſoon as the lieutenant went out, my new maſter walked a turn or two about his cabbin, in the exalted happineſs of conſcious virtue; and then drawing a bill, for conſiderably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he deſired that he ſhould be called, and when he entered, " I beg pardon (ſaid he) for interrupting you, " but it is to deſire that you will preſent my compli-
" ments to your wife, and tell her I beg ſhe will ac-
" cept of a trifling preſent from me, which I have " taken the liberty to include in the bill. Come! no " words! In this I will not be contradicted."

" O Sir!" (anſwered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he reached him the bill, and kiſſing it eagerly) " this is too much! My heart will burſt."—Saying which, he went out of the cabbin, in a ſilence more expreſſive of his ſoul, than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land, and ſea-ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable.

WHEN every thing was ſettled, and the pacquet ſail'd, the lieutenant deſired leave to wait upon my maſter; and as ſoon as he entered, " I come, " Sir, (ſaid he) to pay you the thanks, which the " fullneſs of my heart would not let me utter before. " You have raiſed me to happineſs from the loweſt " ſtate of deſpair."——

" Hold, my friend!" (anſwered my maſter taking his hand, and ſqueezing it tenderly) " Speak no more " of it, I conjure you. I am abundantly overpaid for " what I have done, by the pleaſure of having ſerved " a man of merit; and ſhall think you repine at my " happineſs in being able to purchaſe that pleaſure, if " I ever hear the affair mentioned more."

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he ſaw oppreſſed with gratitude, he then changed the converſation to another ſubject, when the lieutenant ſhewed ſo much good ſenſe, and ſolid judgment, that my maſter could not forbear expreſſing his aſtoniſhment, that ſuch a man ſhould have been ſo long unpromoted in the ſervice.

" If

" If you can have patience to hear the ſtory of my " life (anſwered the lieutenant) it will ſoon explain " that difficulty to you. My father was an officer in " the army, who was rewarded for the loſs of a leg, " and thirty years ſervice, with the half-pay of a cap- " tain of foot. As he had a wife and children to " maintain and provide for, he retired to a cheap " county, where he lived in the moſt rigid œconomy " in hopes of ſaving, for he could not make any thing, " being precluded from every kind of induſtry, by " the profeſſion to which he had devoted his youth.

" The firſt acquaintance a ſtranger gets in a coun- " try place is the parſon of the pariſh. It was my " father's happineſs to fix his habitation, where there " was a clergyman who would have been a valuable " acquaintance in any place, and who was equally " happy, in the acquiſition of a rational acquaintance " in him. The common intercourſe of neighbour- " hood was therefore ſoon improved between them " into the ſtrongeſt friendſhip, in the intimacy of " which, as my father would often naturally mention " his anxiety for his children, his friend perſwaded " him to breed me, the eldeſt, to the ſea-ſervice, in " which he thought he himſelf might be able to ſerve " me, by his intereſt with ſeveral commanders, with " whom he had been acquainted formerly, when chap- " lain to a man of war. That is the ſervice!" (would " the good man ſay, with pleaſure ſparkling in his " eyes) That is the ſervice in which merit is never " diſregarded. You would not have been laid aſide " after thirty years, to pine upon five ſhillings a day, " if you had been bred to the ſea. No! no! merit is " all that is neceſſary there.

" Such an argument was too flattering to my fa- " ther's hopes to be reſiſted. Though he felt the " evil of not having been bred to buſineſs himſelf, he " was charmed at the thought of his ſon's being placed " in the way of riſing to an higher ſphere, and readily " aſſented to the advice of his friend, who not con- " tent with meer advice, inſiſted on taking me home " with him, and giving me ſuch an education, as " ſhould qualify me to make a figure in the profeſſion

" to which he had directed me. " If ever a man of " merit in the ſea-ſervice (would he often ſay) fails " of riſing, it is for want of having had a good e- " ducation to found his hopes upon. A meer ſea- " man may work a ſhip, but an Admiral ſhould be a " ſcholar."

" How well this reaſoning was founded experience " daily ſhews; though it would be ingratitude in me " to arraign it, as the little taſte for letters, which I " acquired from his care, if it has not contributed to " my advancement, has at leaſt enabled me to ſupport " the ſhock of diſappointment, as well as to avoid " many evils, into which I have ſeen others, who had " not the ſame advantage, fall.

" At ſixteen, (for he inſiſted that it was moſt " wretched policy to turn a boy looſe upon the world " before he had come to the uſe of reaſon, and was " well inſtructed in the principles of morality and re- " ligion, for the ſake of gaining a couple of years " advance:) At ſixteen, I ſay, I was ſent to ſea, pro- " vided with a cheſt of books, and mathematical in- " ſtruments, and a good ſuit of cloaths, not to diſ- " credit the recommendation which my beſt friend " gave me to an Admiral, with whom he had been " moſt intimate, when a lieutenant; and whoſe rea- " dineſs to ſerve him in any thing, he would not admit " a doubt of.

" On my preſenting my letter, the Admiral at firſt " had forgot the name, but recollecting himſelf at " length on my mentioning ſome circumſtances which " I had often heard my friend dwell upon with plea- " ſure, " Very true," (ſaid he) " I remember him " now. He made the beſt bowl of punch of any man " in the navy."——

" This was all the notice the *great man* took of " him, or of me on his account, except I ſhould add, " that on his captain's obſerving I ſhould make a good " figure on the quarter-deck, I was directly rated a " midſhipman; a favour for which I ſoon found I was " indebted to his caution of ſending me well dreſſed, " much more than to his intereſt.

" Though

" Though I felt this diſappointment of my firſt " hopes very ſeverely, on my friend's account, as well " as my own, I could not think of ſhocking him with " the news, but ſaying in general terms that I had " been well received, reſolved to apply myſelf to my " buſineſs, and try whether I could not deſerve that " favour, which he had failed to procure me.

" As I had been accuſtomed to converſation very " different from that of thoſe, with whom alone I " could now converſe, I took every opportunity, " when off duty, of running to my books. But the " relief I found from this was for the preſent over- " ballanced by the general ridicule, into which it drew " me; eſpecially as I not only avoided obſcenity, " ſwearing, and drinking myſelf, but had alſo been " ſo imprudent as to rebuke others for them. I was " immediately nick-named *the parſon*, and avoided by " every one in the ſhip.

" I need not deſcribe to you the ſituation of a *petit* " officer, inſulted by thoſe below him, ridiculed by " his equals, and looked down upon with contempt " by his ſuperiors, who forget they ever were in his " ſtation themſelves. I bore it for fifteen years, at " the end of which time, having the good fortune to " be ſent to *London*, with a preſs-gang, on purpoſe " to mortify me, for I always diſliked that particular " duty, more than any other in the ſervice, on ſeeing " an advertiſement in the news-papers, that all who " were qualified by their ſtanding to be lieutenants in " the navy, ſhould attend to paſs their examination, I " offered myſelf without any other introduction, or " intereſt, and was appointed to a ſhip.

" In this ſtation I have now done my duty for five " and twenty years, without reprehenſion; but as I " have no *corporation-intereſt* to puſh me at home, " none of the *modern polite accompliſhments*, to recom- " mend me to the favourites of fortune, whom I oc- " caſionally meet in the ſervice, nor have ever had the " good luck to find an opportunity of making my- " ſelf remarkable, by any action of *eclat*, though in " itſelf no more than a ſucceſsful blunder, my uniform

" conduct and care have paſſed unnoticed, and I re-
" main a lieutenant ſtill."

The circumſtances of this ſtory affected my maſter in the ſtrongeſt manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and deſiring him not to deſpair, repeated his promiſe of uſing all his intereſt to ſerve him, of the ſucceſs of which he had no reaſon to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One inſtance though of my maſter's conduct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it ſhews his character in the ſtrongeſt light, which was, that he never interfered in the buſineſs of his officers, but if he happened to ſee any thing which he diſapproved, inſtead of interpoſing his own authority publickly, and giving contrary orders, he always ſpoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his direction under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he ſpared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and conſequently leſſened in their opinion.

This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but alſo contributed greatly to advance the ſervice. For as every officer knew that he ſhould have the credit, or bear the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themſelves with the utmoſt ardour; whereas on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careleſs of courſe, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himſelf the merit of ſucceſs; if they do not even take a malignant pleaſure in any miſcarriage, the blame of which they have ſo juſt an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL'S *maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general.*

WHEN we arrived at the place of our deſtination, we found the ſhore covered with an extenſive incampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the moſt active war.

The firſt thing my maſter did was of courſe to wait upon the General, whoſe operations he was ſent to aſſiſt. He met him viewing an occaſional fortification, which he had cauſed to be raiſed to train his army to the method of making regular ſieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground to be ſowed with vegetables to correct the bad effects of the ſalt proviſions, which his men had lived upon in their paſſage thither, and preſerve them in health.

The account he received from my maſter of the heavy loſs ſuſtained in the expedition from which he had juſt come, gave him viſible pleaſure, as it ſeemed to ſet his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverſe of that obſerved there, in the moſt advantageous light.

"I wonder" (ſaid he, looking around him with an air of conſcious exultation) "how officers can reconcile it to themſelves to throw away the lives of their men, in ſuch a manner! For my part, I act upon very different principles. I take care not only to give my troops an inſight into all the various branches

" of the military art, but alſo to keep them in ſuch " health as may enable them to reap the advantage of " their experience. There is nothing ſo bad in war " as precipitation. It was the ſole cauſe of the late " General's defeat and death."——

" Yes!" (interrupted an officer who ſtood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience) " Delay is full as bad. Your troops want neither " health nor experience to conquer every oppoſition " they can poſſibly meet; and will accompliſh the end " they were ſent upon before your cabbages are fit " for them to eat, if you will but lead them againſt " their enemies, and not give them time to retire with " their effects into places, whither it is impoſſible for " an army to purſue them, while your men waſte their " time and ſpirits in the fooliſh parade of mock battles, " and ſieges, till they loſe their ardour by delays " which can anſwer no end, but that of protracting " the war, and thereby lengthening a lucrative com- " mand."

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and ſtruck the General with equal ſurprize and indignation, as it touched him in the tendereſt part; however, diſſembling his paſſion, of which he had an abſolute command, " I would have you to know, Sir," (ſaid he) " that I think it the higheſt aſſurance in you to " attempt cenſuring my conduct, who are ſent meerly " to execute my orders. When I aſk your opinion, " it will be time enough for you to give it, till then, " obedience, not advice, is what I expect from you. " If I did not hold it beneath me to ſhew reſentment " to one ſo abſolutely ſubject to my power, you ſhould " inſtantly find the effect of this inſolence. But pre- " ſume not on that protection any farther, as you " regard your ſafety. No man provokes me with im- " punity."

" N—n—nor me!" (ſputtered the officer, whoſe temper, hot as that of the General was cool, caught fire at the fainteſt ſhadow of offence, and flamed almoſt to madneſs, as ſoon as rage permitted him to articulate a word) " Nor m——m——me. I ſeek no

" p—p—

" p—p— protection but my ſword, with which I will " v—v—vindicate my own honour, and make good " what I ſay.—Talk to m—m—me of ſafety, and " im—p—p—punity!"——

The affair now became ſerious, theſe words ſtriking at the General's ſafety, as well as his honour, and convincing him that he muſt ſupport his dignity by a vigorous effort. " What!" (retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority) " Do you " menace me too? I ſuppoſe you deſign to raiſe a " mutiny in the army, but I'll prevent that."——— Then turning to an officer who attended, " Take " that madman away" (continued he) " and put him " under a guard, till he recovers his reaſon. Such be- " haviour muſt not go unpuniſhed."—Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away ſpeechleſs and convulſed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner, an honour, however, which my maſter declined accepting that day, as he was moſt impatient to ſee his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the General.

The meeting of theſe brothers was truely affecting. The inſtinctive connection of nature had been indiſſolubly cemented between them by the ſacred bond of friendſhip founded on a ſenſe of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the ſame principles they had both devoted themſelves to the profeſſion of arms, in the different ſervices of the land and ſea, as if to avoid the jealouſy of rivalſhip, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour.

Undebauched by affluence, and diſdaining to waſte his youth at home in luxury, when the cauſe of his country called for his aſſiſtance, the elder bravely came to ſeek for glory in theſe inhoſpitable wilds, with as much ardour as my maſter purſued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours which he might tranſmit to his own poſterity, equal to thoſe which his brother inherited from his illuſtrious anceſtors.

When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally anſwered, my maſter gratified the curioſity of his

his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought ſucceſs, cloſing the black detail with ſome remarks on the different conduct of the General of this army, which were much to his advantage.

" Your reflections, my deareſt brother," (anſwered the officer) " are moſt juſt, as things appear to you. " But when you have had an opportunity of ſeeing " farther, I fear you will find reaſon to change your " ſentiments, and that the *delay* here proceeds at bot- " tom from the ſame principle with the *precipitation*, " which produced ſuch terrible effects with you, and " Heaven grant it produce not as bad. Intereſt is the " object every where; and *whether that is purſued by* " *ſacrificing the forces in raſh and ill-conducted at-* " *tempts, to gain an immediate* PRIZE, or *by letting* " *them melt away in inaction, to accumulate the* PRO- " FITS *of command*, makes no difference in the end.

" I would not be underſtood from this to juſtify " the officer for arraigning the General's conduct, " in ſo publick, and perſonal a manner. Such ungo- " verned warmth is inexcuſable. Proper reſpect muſt " be paid to thoſe who bear authority, or the effect of " that authority ceaſes; indeed it is not to them, but " to him who delegates the authority, the reſpect is " paid. A General at the head of an army repreſents " his Sovereign in the plenitude of his power, and to " ſuffer any ſlight to be ſhewn to his delegated charac- " ter, were to betray the truſt of that delegation.

" For this reaſon, I think his puniſhment was ne- " ceſſary, and *therefore* juſt; I wiſh I could add that " it was equally ſo from the injuſtice as from the cir- " cumſtances of the accuſation, which occaſioned it; " but to any one who will not ſhut his eyes it muſt ap- " pear beyond a doubt, that his great crime was ſpeak- " ing too much, and too plain truth; for with all " our boaſted care for the preſervation of the men, " their diſtreſſes are ſuch as have not left me a " penny in my pocket, for I cannot ſhut my hand, " where my heart is opened. In ſhort, I am ſo ſick of " the whole ſcene, that I have ſollicited the command " of a detached party, with which I hope to ſhew

" that

" that the native bravery of *Britons*, when led with " ſpirit, requires but little experience to enable them " to conquer more formidable foes, than naked ſavages, " led by a few wretched *Frenchmen*, in a condition " not much better. I ſet out to-morrow morning, " and think it a particular happineſs that you have " arrived time enough for me to have this interview " with you."

The reſt of their converſation is not neceſſary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domeſtick concerns. This much only it is but juſt for me to obſerve, that it ſhewed their conduct in the intercourſe and relations of private life to be as amiable, as that in their publick capacities were exalted; and proved that moral virtue is the beſt foundation for true heroiſm.—My maſter's brother having in the courſe of their converſation intimated his having ſome preſent occaſion for money, I here entered into his ſervice.

You may judge that I remained not long in the poſſeſſion of my new maſter. His brother had no ſooner left him, than he paid me away, among a large number of my fellows, to a merchant for ſome additions, which he thought it neceſſary to make at his own expence to the proviſions made by the publick, for the ſupport and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniencies of a campaign in an uninhabited country.

The ſentiments expreſſed by my maſter, in the effuſion of his ſoul to his brother, ſhewed his character in the juſteſt light; I ſhall therefore only add, that as he acted from principles firmly eſtabliſhed on the invariable baſis of reaſon, there was no danger of his deviating from the paths in which he ſet out.

So bright a proſpect made it a pain to me to quit his ſervice ſo ſuddenly; but I have ſince met many mortifications of the ſame kind, my ſtay being always ſhorteſt, in the beſt hands.

My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next maſter, the merchant, who in the common courſe of ſolliciting permiſſion for a ſhip of his to ſail with a cargoe, that muſt be ruined by

by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the ſhipping in the place, in the unfathomable wiſdom of the ruling powers, to promote ſome unintelligible plan of ſervice, gave me to the General's clerk, from whom in the ſame courſe of buſineſs, I came into the ſervice of the General.

End of the First Book.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's maſter makes ſome characteriſtick reflections. He is ſurprized at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome people's riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native AMERICANS; *and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the cloſet, plans of operation for armies in the field. Odd reaſon why the* AMERICANS *are deſirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

WHEN I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was waiting in his tent, with the moſt anxious impatience, for the return of a perſon whom

whom he had employed to mediate as of himſelf, between him, and the officer, whoſe preſumption in daring to find fault with his meaſures he had thought proper to puniſh in the manner I juſt now mentioned.

His reflections on an affair that ſtruck ſo dangerouſly at his pride and avarice, the ruling paſſions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the ſight of the money gave them a more pleaſing turn. Having aſked the clerk a few queſtions in the way of buſineſs, and diſmiſſed him, he took the purſe, and weighing it in his hand, "Aye!" (ſaid he with delight gliſtening in his eyes) "this will do. This embargo was a lucky "thought. Let who will complain of the hinderance "it is to the buſineſs of the publick, it advances "mine; and that is all I care for. I came here to "ſerve myſelf, and not the publick; and as there is "neither plunder nor contributions to be got by acti-"vity, I muſt try what I can do another way. I "ſhewed my dexterity at hunting Savages in the "mountains of my own country; and have no deſire "to renew the chace here. It was neceſſary for me "then to do ſomething that ſhould make me remark-"able, and gain favour with thoſe, who I ſaw muſt "prevail in the end, and therefore I ſpared no trouble "nor fatigue, neither friend nor foe, to convince them "of my attachment; and in reward they have now "given me this command, in conducting which I "muſt uſe delay to reap the advantages of my former "activity. *Fabius* ſaved *Rome* by delay; let me but "make my fortune by it, and I envy him not his fame. "I prefer this ſound" (chinking the purſe) "to the "empty noiſe of publick acclamation, the ſhouts of a "giddy mob, who bleſs and curſe with the ſame "breath, and without knowing why they do either. "No! no! this is the muſick that charms my ear."

His meditations were broken off here, by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation; nor even accept of his liberty till he ſhould be acquitted by a court-martial, and have juſtice done him for the affront offered to his honour.

Such

Such an account was far from being agreeable to my maſter, who for obvious reaſons wiſhed to have every thing go on as quietly as poſſible. After ſome pauſe, "This is a damn'd affair," (ſaid he) "but we "muſt now e'en make the beſt we can of it. Who "could have thought that a country-man of my own "would have proved ſo refractory. We have always "been remarkable for hanging well together. *One* "*and all* was the word, or we could never have done "ſuch great matters. If it is once found out, that "we can be divided, we ſhall ſoon loſe our conſe- "quence; and every man be reduced to *the poor proſ-* "*pect of depending on his own merit.* However, ſince "he will not accept of his liberty here, he ſhall e'en "go home a priſoner, and recover it there as well as "he can. I am of the right ſide; and don't fear but "my friends will bring me through more than this; "eſpecially as it is a national concern to us all alike. "In the mean time, we muſt double our diligence to "make hay while the ſun ſhines."

The gentleman, who was in all his ſecrets, acknowledged the force of his reaſoning; and was going to communicate to him ſome new ſtrokes of management, when word was brought my maſter, that a perſon, to whom he could not properly be denied, deſired to ſee him.

There was ſomething in the whole appearance of this perſon that ſtruck me with the ſtrongeſt curioſity the moment I ſaw him. His ſtature, above the common ſize of man, was form'd with the juſteſt proportion, and denoted ability to execute the moſt difficult attempts, which the determined and enterprizing ſpirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reaſon attempered reſolution, ſhew'd the genuine workings of his ſoul; and his whole deportment was in the unaffected eaſe of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of ſtudied rules of behaviour, deviſed only to deceive.

As ſoon as he entered, "I am come, Sir," (ſaid he, throwing himſelf careleſsly into a chair, and cutting ſhort all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious obſervation of which my maſter prided himſelf not a little)

little) " to receive your orders. It is time, I ſhould " join my people, who grow impatient, as the enemy " have began to ſtir; and I never chuſe to baulk their " firſt ardour. There is nothing like taking men in " the humour to fight; and before they have time to " conſider too much about it."

" I deſign, Sir," (anſwered my maſter, with a ſolemnity, and affectation of politeneſs, which made the ſtrongeſt contraſt to the blunt freedom of the other) " to call a council of war very ſoon; at which I ſhall " be glad of your aſſiſtance, to form a plan of operations for the campaign. When that is done, and all " proper meaſures concerted, you ſhall ſet out. *Precipitation* is very dangerous; and directly contrary " to the principles of the *regular art of war*, by which " I mean to proceed. The Savages ſhall find ſome " difference between my conduct, and that of my predeceſſors. They ſhan't ſurprize me on my march; " nor draw me into an ambuſh, among woods and " mountains."

" As to the art of war, Sir," (replied the other) " I know no more of it, than what Heaven and common ſenſe have taught me, which is to find out the " enemy, and beat them as ſoon as I can, my plan for " which is always directed by preſent circumſtances; " nor do I know how one can be formed to effect, " any other way."

" Your exploits have always been well executed;" (returned my maſter with an air, and tone of importance, as deſigning to ſay ſomething that ſhould raiſe him in the opinion of the other) " But you have hi- " therto acted rather in the low ſphere of a *partiſan*, " than as a general. The duty of a general comprehends much more than what you mention, as you " ſhall have an opportunity of learning before we take " the field. I intend to go through a regular courſe " of military operations to inſtruct my officers, and " diſcipline the men. Your *Heaven-taught* generals " may beat the enemy; but that is the leaſt part of " the care and duty of a general now a days. The " very leaſt part."——

" And

" And pray, Sir, how much time will this courſe of " operations take up?"——

" I cannot exactly ſay; but not above a month or " two, I imagine."——

" A month or two! why, Sir, I hope we ſhall have " done the moſt troubleſome part of our work by " that time; or elſe I do not know what may be the " conſequence. For, to be plain with you, theſe " delays will never do with the *uncivilized Americans*, " who judge of things only by common ſenſe; and " cannot be made to comprehend this way of carrying " on a war, by lying ſtill in a camp and doing nothing. " They have formed very diſadvantageous notions of " the delays already made; and think a man who does " not advance to fight his enemy is afraid of him; and " therefore if they are not led to action directly, they " will deſert, ſo that if I ſtay a month or two here at " ſchool to learn a leſſon I may never have occaſion " for, I muſt find other forces to put it in practice " with?——

" Cannot you deviſe any reaſon that may account " for your ſtaying, to their ſatisfaction?"——

" Really, Sir, not I! I never was good at deviſing " reaſons, deſtitute of truth, in my life; and have " entirely forgot the practice ſince I have converſed " with the *Americans*, who are far from being ſuch " fools, as they are too generally thought to be. " Though they have not the advantages of learning, " they ſee by the light of natural reaſon through all " the boaſted wiles of policy; and as they never mean " deceit themſelves, deteſt it in others, however ſpe- " ciouſly diſguiſed; nor ever place confidence a ſecond " time, where it has been once abuſed."——

" How! the *Americans* never mean deceit! Surely " you muſt know better! they are the moſt perfidious, " deceitful Savages, that burthen the earth; and it " would be an advantage to the world, if the whole " race of them was exterminated."

" Such of them as converſe much with *civilized* " *Europeans*, it is too true, learn many things from " them, which are a diſgrace to their own *Savage* na- " ture, as you call it. But I ſpeak of the general

" diſpoſition

" diſpoſition of the people. Treat them with can-
" dour, probity, and tenderneſs; and they will re-
" turn them tenfold, in all their intercourſe with you;
" as on the other hand, they ſeldom fail to retort the
" contrary treatment with ſevere uſury. Nor are
" they to be blamed. In all their dealings with the
" *Europeans*, they find themſelves impoſed upon in
" the groſſeſt manner; in a manner not fit to be prac-
" tiſed even with brutes. Their ſenſibility is quick,
" and their paſſions ungoverned; perhaps ungovern-
" able: How then can it be wondered at, that they
" make returns in kind, whenever they find opportu-
" nity; and become the moſt dangerous enemies?
" Whereas if thoſe paſſions were attach'd by good
" treatment, they would be the moſt affectionate,
" ſteady, and careful friends. I ſpeak from expe-
" rience. I treat them as rational creatures; and
" they behave as ſuch to me. I never deceive them;
" and they never deceive me. I do them all the good
" offices in my power; and they return them mani-
" fold. In ſhort, I practiſe to them the behaviour
" which I wiſh to meet from them, and am never diſ-
" appointed. All the evils which have been ſuffered
" from them have proceeded from the unhappy error,
" of thinking ourſelves poſſeſſed of a ſuperiority over
" them, which nature, that is Heaven, has not given
" us. They are our fellow-creatures; and in gene-
" ral above our level, in the virtues which give real
" preheminence, however deſpicably we think of, and
" injuriouſly we treat them."——

" They are much obliged to your character of them
" at leaſt; whatever others may be. And pray, Sir,
" what is it you would have mé to do, to preſerve the
" good opinion of theſe moſt *virtuous people?*——

" I preſume not, Sir, to ſay what is proper for you
" to do. All I deſire is that you will diſmiſs me
" directly, in a capacity of making good my promiſes
" to my friends; and by the time you ſay you ſhall be
" ready to move with the army, I hope to give a good
" account of the enemy."——

" That,

"That, Sir, I have no thought of. However, as "you are ſo deſirous of going, I ſhall not delay you. "I'll form a plan of operations for you this very day."

"For me, Sir? I do not underſtand you. How "can you know what will be proper, or poſſible for "me to do, at the diſtance of many hundred miles, "in a country you are an utter ſtranger to. In *Eu-* "*rope*, where war, like a game of cheſs, is *played*, "as I may ſay, entirely by art, that method of plan- "ning in the cloſet the operations of the field may do "perhaps; but then it is neceſſary that each ſide "ſhould play the game by the ſame rules. A body of "*Americans*, who know nothing of the art of war "but fighting, might be apt to move ſo irregularly, "as to diſconcert the whole ſcheme of the *game*. In- "deed, by what I can judge of the matter, that very "method of planning the operations of a campaign is "advantageous only to the general, as it prolongs "the war, and conſequently the emoluments of com- "mand, by tying up his hand from availing himſelf "of any unforeſeen circumſtances, in his favour. "Whereas if armies were ſent out only to fight, as "formerly before the *improvements* in the art of war, "the diſpute would ſoon be decided, and even the "vanquiſhed better off, than the victors are at preſent, "whoſe riches and ſtrength are ſo exhauſted by this "dilatory way of proceeding, that they are not the "better for their ſucceſs. I hope, Sir, you do not "take offence at the plainneſs of my ſpeech. I have "ſo long been accuſtomed to converſe with *Savages*, "who ſpeak juſt what they think, that I am become "quite a ſtranger to that *diſſimulation*, which is called "*politeneſs*, among *civilized* nations; and muſt make "uſe of words, in their original intention of convey- "ing my thoughts."——

"Not in the leaſt, Sir! I like your free manner "much. It is in the character of a ſoldier. I will order "every thing to be got ready for you directly; and "you ſhall go as ſoon as you pleaſe; at full liberty to "act as you ſee proper."——

"I hope,

" I hope, Sir, I ſhall not make a bad uſe of that " liberty. And pray, among the other things, do not " forget to order me ſome money."——

" Money, Sir! What occaſion can you poſſibly " have for money, among *Savages*, who do not know " the value of it?"——

" Why really, Sir, that queſtion is natural. But " the matter is, the *Savages* who come among the " *Europeans* ſee every thing governed by gold, in ſuch " a manner, that they have taken it into their heads, " we worſhip it; and therefore are become as eager " for it as ourſelves, in hopes of gaining an aſcendency " over us, when they have got our god, in their poſ- " ſeſſion."

A conſcious heart takes to itſelf more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was ſaid touched my maſter to the quick, and made him not deſire to purſue the converſation any farther with ſuch a free ſpeaker, nor have ſo nice an obſerver longer about him, to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him therefore the money he required, he wiſh'd him ſucceſs with a forced politeneſs, and diſmiſſed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleaſure to me to change my ſervice on this occaſion; as the idea I had conceived of my new maſter, both from his appearance and converſation, promiſed me ſome variety, and my curioſity was heartily ſurfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL*'s maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences.*

AS ſoon as every thing was ready, my maſter ſet out for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may ſuppoſe, through uninhabited deſarts.

The reception he met with from his people was the very reverſe of what *Sovereigns* uſually meet. They welcomed him with ſincere joy and reſpect, which they expreſſed in the overflowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade: I ſay, "Sovereigns," as he really enjoyed that power in its moſt rational ſenſe, his will being a law to all around him, *becauſe they always found it juſt, and advantageous to them.*

Though the account which he gave my late maſter of his manner of treating his people ſhew'd a juſt foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the firſt rulers of the earth, was founded alſo on the relations of nature, and ſupported by its ſtrongeſt ties, he being literally the father of his ſubjects, the king of his own family.

To explain this it is neceſſary to inform you, that on his fixing his reſidence among theſe *uncivilized* nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he had laid aſide all ſuch rules of conduct as ſeemed to him to be contradictory to natural reaſon, and the publick good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience.

Among theſe the chief was the cuſtom of reſtraining the commerce between the ſexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the deſire which firſt brought

brought them together had ceaſed: As he ſaw that the ſtrongeſt paſſion which governs the human heart is that deſire, (for his philoſophy was not refined enough to ſuggeſt one thought of governing the paſſions) and as the continuation of the ſpecies depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every oppoſition to it to be moſt criminal in itſelf, and detrimental to the publick good, (properly the firſt object of every civil inſtitution, and which can be promoted no way ſo effectually, as by promoting population) and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under ſuch reſtrictions only, as were evidently neceſſary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the ſpecies. He gave liberty to every man to converſe with as many females as he pleaſed; and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the uſe of it would defeat the deſign; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cauſe confuſion, and prevent both paternal care, and filial duty, by the uncertainty of deſcent: But the latter inſtance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to chuſe whom they liked, and if not pregnant quit them at pleaſure, for others, without reproach or ſhame, the off ſpring of all which connections were to remain with the fathers.

I ſhall not ſay whether reaſon originally ſuggeſted this ſyſtem to him; or (as is often the caſe) whether he ſought for reaſons to ſupport the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the ſame. His ſubjects encreaſed in an uncommon degree; and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the juſteſt of all principles, voluntary conſent, over a people inſeparably linked to him, and to each other, by the ſtrongeſt ties of nature, as being by this complicated commerce in the ſtricteſt ſenſe one family; for diſdaining to make laws for others, which he would not obſerve himſelf, (like too many of his brother legiſlators) he had enforced his precepts ſo powerfully by his example, that there was ſcarce an houſe in any of the tribes around him, from which he had not

not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number.

That his reception, as I have obſerved, ſhould be moſt cordial from ſuch ſubjects is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailing him with one voice by every tender relation of nature, brother, father, ſon, huſband, ſhewed an affection too ſublime to be expreſſed by formal rules, and impoſſible to be ſeen without ſympathizing in it.

When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and diſtributing among them the preſents which he had received for that purpoſe, gave them an account of the mighty army ſent by his Sovereign againſt the enemy, and propoſed to them to aſſiſt its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence, in one who had never deceived them. They readily and ſincerely aſſented to his propoſal, and ſending to invite all their neighbours to join them, ſeparated to make the very little preparations neceſſary for perſons who were ſtrangers to luxury, and knew no wants but thoſe of nature.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes his maſter's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progreſs. The manner in which he found the females of his houſehold engaged. Remarks on* FINERY. *Account of their amuſements, with the manner in which they uſually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL'*s maſter kept peace in his family.*

AS ſoon as my maſter had thus concluded the buſineſs of his publick character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domeſtick concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence by the ſide of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the fe-

males of his preſent family; for inſtead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he not only always diſmiſſed them with preſents in the moſt friendly manner, but alſo kept up an intercourſe of regard with them and their ſucceſſive huſbands, every one of whom he attached to himſelf in the ſtrongſt manner, being particularly ready on all occaſions to do them every good office in his power.

In theſe cottages they bred up their children, and enjoyed from his care, all the neceſſaries of life with more convenience and comfort than they could poſſibly have experienced among their own people, unimbittered by any of thoſe jealouſies and feuds which ſuch a ſituation might ſeem to threaten, ſo equally did he diſpenſe his favours among them.

When he had given ſome orders in his houſe, he walked out to viſit his family, and enjoy the ſublimeſt inſtance of the happineſs of power, in making all who were ſubject to it happy, by the unaffected tenderneſs with which he enquired after their welfare, and returned their careſſes, on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of theſe females was moſt different from the delicate ſenſibility that ſoftened the beauties of * *Amelia*, or the fire which animated the charms of *Olivia*; but cuſtom, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, eſpecially as no compariſon could there be made to their diſadvantage; and the honeſt readineſs with which they met his addreſſes, the warmth with which they ſhared his joy, amply over-ballanced any imaginary defect in feature or complexion; any ignorance of thoſe affected arts of coyneſs, which overacted often pall the taſte for long expected pleaſure.

As his women did not expect his viſit ſo ſoon, he found them engaged, according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domeſtic œconomy, or in ſuch amuſements as cuſtom had made pleaſing to them. The occupations of the former kind were neceſſarily confined within a narrow circle, from the circumſtances of their lives; but in the latter, fancy,

* *See Vol.* I. — *Chap.* iv.

fancy, ſole ſovereign of the ſcene, aſſerted her unbounded rule, and ſported in variety of forms, many of which I ſoon had an opportunity of ſeeing.

As my maſter proceeded in his patriarchal progreſs, he met a conſiderable number of the females of his family, with ſuch of the neighbouring men, as from age or idleneſs were unfit for more uſeful employments, aſſembled together under a ſpreading tree, that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dreſſed out in their gayeſt apparel, and engaged in different kinds of diverſions. At the ſight of him they all aroſe, and would have deſiſted, but he prevented them, and not only made them reſume their ſports, but alſo ſat down himſelf, in the midſt of the company, to be a ſpectator of them.

It ſeems it was a cuſtom among them to meet frequently thus at each other's cottages, for the pleaſure of enjoying their favourite amuſements to more advantage together, and diſplaying their *finery*, to ſet off which, no art nor care was neglected on theſe occaſions. They dreſſed themſelves in their beſt blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours to make them look more gawdy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers. Strings of glaſs-beads were rolled around their arms and legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and braſs; and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues.

I ſee your laughter moved at this deſcription; but that proceeds from narrow prejudice, and want of rational reflection, on which it would appear that all uſeleſs ornaments are equally juſt objects of ridicule, whether made of ſilks, and laces, or parti-coloured rags; whether bits of glaſs, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I ſay, but for a moment; and you will ſee that in reality there is nothing more abſurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body, than another, *rings of braſs*, for inſtance, *on the toes*, than *golden on the fingers*; in *carving the ſkin*, than *boring the ears*; or *in painting the face blue and green*,

than *white* and *red*. The ſame vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the ſame effect of admiration; as in things equally unſupported by reaſon, cuſtom and caprice bear equal ſway. The difference in the means therefore makes none in the end; at leaſt none to the diſadvantage of the perſons of whom I ſpeak, as it certainly is more abſurd to laviſh treaſures, that might be ſo much better employed, to a worthleſs purpoſe which cheaper bawbles would anſwer as well.

The amuſements, in which they were engaged, were as whimſical as their dreſſes. Some ſkipped about, deſcribing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and wearineſs obliged them to ſit down. Others, and theſe the greateſt number, were employed in chucking ſhells or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the ſand, for prizes of bits of tin, or braſs, which game they applied themſelves to with the greateſt eagerneſs and anxiety, and many were ſo expert at, as to ſtrip their antagoniſts of all their hoards, often indeed not without the aſſiſtance of chicanery and deceit: And a few of the eldeſt, and thoſe who had nothing to ſtake at play, gathered up and down into little ſets, and entertained themſelves with making remarks upon the reſt, not always dictated by good-nature or truth; while the miſtreſs of the cottage buſied herſelf in adjuſting ceremonials, ſettling her company at their ſeveral amuſements, and ſerving them with milk, or broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office ſhe never repined at, as her conſequence was eſtabliſhed by the number of her gueſts.

Though meer amuſement was the obvious end of theſe meetings, other objects were generally purſued, and other conſequences produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often compleated; and trifling as the prizes were, for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the paſſions, and ſet the competitors together by the ears, till they almoſt clawed out each other's eyes.

Their ſports were at length beginning to take their uſual turn. The tempers of the loſers became ſoured; and the detection of ſome *deep* ſtrokes of play gave riſe to altercations, which would ſoon have been followed

lowed by blows; but my maſter interpoſed his authority, and put an end to their diſputes, when the party broke up; ſome retiring to keep the aſſignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the reſt to calculate their winnings, or deviſe ſchemes for retrieving their loſſes, at their next meeting; and my maſter having ſingled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the reſt taking offence, or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to ſupply their loſs elſewhere.

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment at this whole ſcene, eſpecially at my maſter's hardineſs in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage; but what will it be, when I tell you that that number often amounted to hundreds; and that he never had recourſe to any kind of ſeverity, in his conduct to them?

To comprehend this, it is neceſſary for you to conſider, that moſt of, if not all the uneaſineſſes which imbitter the life of man ariſe from an officious intruſion into the uneaſineſſes of others, or an over-weening partiality to himſelf, that makes him expect treatment, which he does not give, and take offence where none is meant him, for matters not worth his being offended at; an obſervation that will hold in every ſtate publick and private; among *governours*, as well as *governed*.

His rule then was never to take part in their diſputes among themſelves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himſelf ſet them the example. This diſarmed them of that *perverſeneſs, which is the ſex's moſt offenſive weapon.* They remained conſtant to him, becauſe they were not reſtrained from being otherwiſe, whenever they pleaſed; nor did they trouble him with their diſputes, becauſe they ſaw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's maſter is honourably rewarded for his ſervices. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd inſtance of conjugal love; and refuſes the civil offer of CHRYSAL's *maſter, for a natural reaſon.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE very next morning his people aſſembled before his door, in readineſs to obey his commands, when he led them directly in queſt of the enemy, ſharing himſelf in all their fatigues, and teaching them to deſpiſe danger by his example, ſo little did he know of the duty of a general.

It would be tireſome to enter into a particular deſcription of an expedition, carried on among wilderneſſes, and deſarts, and conſiſting chiefly of ambuſcades, and ſurprizes. It is ſufficient to ſay that he was ſucceſsful in all his enterprizes, reaſon and preſence of mind ſerving him inſtead of experience, in the regular art of war; and courage well ſupplying the place of diſcipline in his men.

Such ſervices could not miſs of reward from a juſt, and judicious Sovereign. His power was inlarged; and he received thoſe marks of favour and diſtinction, which were originally inſtituted to excite virtuous emulation, and ſet the ſeal of honour on ſucceſsful merit; though like moſt other human inſtitutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only diſgrace, from being beſtowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general ſhould think proper to let it move, ſome of his people brought before him an *European* lady, whom they found wander-

ing

ing in thoſe unfrequented wilds, her guide having miſtaken his way.

Such a ſituation neceſſarily entitled her to his compaſſion and aſſiſtance; but he ſoon felt himſelf ſtill farther intereſted in her favour, when he found ſhe was a native of his own country, and of a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this diſtant part of the world.

There is not a ſtronger inſtance of the force of that attachment, called in a larger ſenſe *patriotiſm*, than the inſtinctive affection which perſons of the ſame country, though utterly unacquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a ſtrange place. My maſter inſtantly called her his dear country-woman, and embracing her with the tenderneſs of a brother, led her away to his own tent, which he reſigned to her, as the beſt accommodation he could give her; and then went and ordered every thing that had belonged to her, which his men looking upon as fair prize had taken and divided among themſelves, to be reſtored, promiſing to recompenſe the captors himſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe had adjuſted her appearance, in ſome better manner, ſhe ſent to deſire my maſter's company, for he had told her that he ſhould not come without permiſſion, for fear of intruding improperly upon her; and on his expreſſing wonder what could have brought her thus into the midſt of thoſe deſarts ſo far away from every *European* ſettlement, ſhe gratified his curioſity with the following account, which was often interrupted by ſighs, tears, and every expreſſion of the moſt poignant grief.

Her huſband, (ſhe ſaid) who had been an officer of diſtinguiſhed rank in the *Engliſh* forces, had fallen in one of the defeats they ſuffered in the beginning of the war, before *England* had exerted herſelf in ſuch a manner, as to intitle her to ſucceſs; the news of whoſe death affected her ſo extraordinarily, that ſhe reſolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of ſo long a voyage by ſea, and journey through uninhabited deſarts in time of war, for the melancholy pleaſure of one laſt view of his dear remains, which ſhe had ac-

cordingly obtained, though not ſo much to her ſatisfaction as ſhe could have wiſhed, the body being in a ſtate of putrefaction, not poſſible to be approached without diſguſt and abhorrence; nor to be diſtinguiſhed from any other maſs of corruption, when ſhe had cauſed it to be dug out of the grave, in which it had been buried on the ſpot where he had been killed, among the other victims of the day; and was now returning home, when ſhe had happily been found by his people.

Though my maſter was as much unverſed in the regular rules of politeneſs, as of war, good-nature taught him the eſſentials of one, as reaſon had of the other. He heard out her ſtory, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it; and conſoling her with ſome general remarks on the error of indulging immoderate grief, for things not to be remedied, offered to ſend her under a ſufficient eſcort to his own habitation, where ſhe might remain in ſafety, and have the converſation and attendance of his women, till the concluſion of the campaign, when he would convey her himſelf to the next ſea-port, in order to her returning to her own country.

Though ſhe would have looked upon any attempt to conſole her, as the higheſt affront in another ſituation, her preſent circumſtances made her think it not proper to ſhew any reſentment of it to him: beſide, there was ſomething in his appearance, that ſome how made it leſs diſagreeable from him, than it would have been from any other perſon; and would poſſibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention of *his women* alarmed her delicacy, and ſet her virtue on its guard.

Reſolving therefore to have this cleared up, before ſhe would give any direct anſwer to his offer, ſhe expreſſed her high ſenſe of his kindneſs in the politeſt terms; and entering into a general converſation, among other queſtions of meer curioſity, aſked him in a careleſs manner, whom he meant by *his women*, and in what capacity they ſerved him?

Such a queſtion was more than he deſired, though he had inconſiderately laid himſelf open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could juſtify deceit, he

he anſwered her directly and without preface, that they ſerved him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleaſed to continue with him; nor did he deſire any other ſervice from them.

Though ſhe was a good deal diſconcerted at this anſwer, ſhe had the addreſs not to ſeem to underſtand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himſelf into a meaning leſs offenſive to her modeſty; to give him an opportunity for which, "I preſume, Sir," (replied ſhe) "you mean that they wait upon your lady, or perform the other domeſtic offices of your family, in which women ſervants only are employed?"

"No really, madam, (anſwered he) that was not "my meaning. I have no lady for them to wait upon; "nor do they live ſo immediately in my own family, "as to have any domeſtic employment in it."

"How, Sir! Are you not married?"

"Not particularly to any one perſon, madam."

—"That's very ſtrange!" (ſaid ſhe, pleaſed at having gained ſo material a piece of intelligence, and reſolving to purſue the converſation.) "That is "really very ſtrange. And pray, Sir, are theſe ladies "*Europeans?* I ſuppoſe" (ſighing heavily and wiping her eyes) "they are the unhappy widows of ſuch "officers as have fallen in the ſervice, to whom you "have ſhewn the ſame politeneſs and humanity, as I "now experience from you."

"I am ſorry, madam," (anſwered he, to ſatisfy her curioſity at once, and put a ſtop to queſtions which began to be troubleſome) "to be obliged to "undeceive you in an opinion ſo favourable to me; "they are all native *Americans*, by whom I have had "children; and in whoſe unfeigned affection, and "eaſy complying tempers I find ſuch ſatisfaction, that "I never ſhall quit them to attach myſelf ſolely to "any one woman, however ſuperior to them in the "advantages of beauty and education; not, indeed, "that they want qualifications to raiſe both love and "eſteem, as you will find when you have been ſome "time among them."

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to underſtand it, inſtantly put an end to the pleaſure ſhe had began to find in his converſation, and determined her as to his propoſal. "I am much obliged to you "for your civil offer, Sir," (ſaid ſhe, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal courteſie) "but I "cannot accept of it. I have not the leaſt deſire for "the converſation of *Squaws*, and am in haſte to "leave this ſavage place; for which reaſon I ſhall "take it as a favour, if you will ſend ſome of your "people to guard me to the next *Engliſh* ſettlement "to-morrow morning. At preſent I am quite exhauſt-"ed with fatigue, and want ſome reſt, if the diſtreſs "of my heart will permit me to take any."

This thought recalled the remembrance of her loſs: She burſt into a flood of tears; and my maſter withdrew, after finding that his attempts to conſole her, only aggravated her grief, and gave offence to her delicacy.

Unvers'd as he was in the ways of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the ſex, which in every ſtate are the ſame, not to ſee through this change in her behaviour; but the diſcovery had no other effect, than to confirm him in his contempt for ſuch hypocritical levity. Accordingly, finding ſhe continued in the ſame mind next morning, he made the beſt proviſion he could for her journey, and ſent her away with a ſufficient guard, forcing upon her a purſe of gold, *(in which I was)* to defray any accidental expence, for which ſhe might be unprovided, in caſe ſhe ſhould not directly meet a ſhip ready to carry her to *Europe*.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's miſtreſs gives ſome ſtriking inſtances of female conſiſtency. She is cured of her grief, by a perſon of accompliſhments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence. CHRYSAL's *miſtreſs marries, and he changes his ſervice for that of an old maſter.*

AS ſoon as my miſtreſs found herſelf out of ſight of my late maſter, ſhe gave vent to that indignation and rage of diſappointment, which ſhe had thought proper to ſuppreſs, while in his preſence. "Inſenſible brute!" (ſaid ſhe) "Not quit his odious "*Squaws* for any woman! And to have the rudeneſs "to tell me ſo to my face! It ſhews his groſs, low "taſte, for which ſuch animals are fitteſt."——

Then pauſing for ſome moments; "What a charm-"ing figure!" (continued ſhe, ſighing ſoftly) "Such "a ſize! Such ſtrength and eaſe in every motion! "And then the manly beauty in his looks! Had I "but the poliſhing of him! I was too haſty. I ſhould "have waited to inſinuate myſelf into his heart by "degrees. I could not have failed of ſucceſs. My "huſband was as ſtrongly attached to another when "firſt I undertook him. Oh! deareſt, beſt of men! "Never ſhall I meet your fellow! Never ſhall ano-"ther poſſeſs your place in this faithful, wretched "heart."——

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which were often renewed in the ſame ſtrain during her journey, and always ended the ſame way.

On her arrival at the ſea-port, ſhe had the mortification to find that ſhe muſt wait ſome time for a paſſage home, all the ſhips which were there, having ſailed a few days before.

But her vexation at this diſappointment was conſiderably lightened by the converſation of ſeveral companions

panions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken ſuch offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in thoſe ſavage countries, that he had hired a ſubſtitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming ſoldiers or converting ſavages.

Extremes are never laſting: The violence of my miſtreſs's grief had been too much for nature to ſupport, and was beginning to abate of itſelf, when my late maſter awoke another paſſion, that would ſoon have ſupplanted it; and though he did not purſue his advantage, as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inſpired a warmth ready to receive any other impreſſion.

As the chaplain's function, and her rank, not to omit the accompliſhments of both, ſeemed to point them to each other as the moſt proper companions, it was not ſtrange that they ſhould ſoon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy ſhould be inſenſibly improved into a tender paſſion. They made *tete a tete* parties, at games which no one elſe in the place knew how to play with them. They talked of all the places of pleaſurable reſort in England, and of the amuſements purſued at them: And they raiſed their own conſequence in the eyes of each other, by boaſting of acquaintances with perſons they knew only by name.

Such uncommon accompliſhments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, becauſe their own met the ſame complaiſance; and found a pleaſure in being deceived, by one whom it was an equal pleaſure to deceive.

But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the neareſt to being ſo; though far from being well-bred, they knew moſt of the common ceremonies in which good-breeding is by many thought to conſiſt, but which really are the incumbrances

brances of it, of any perſons there; and conſequently appeared to enjoy thoſe advantages in the higheſt degree. They regulated the aſſemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made faſhions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amuſement and concern.

Thus *cut out* for each other, it was impoſſible for this accompliſhed pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their reſpective admirers, than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living huſband, and the happy bridegroom pleaſing himſelf with the thought that the high accompliſhments of his lady would encreaſe his intereſt with his noble patrons.

To crown their happineſs, in a few days after they were married an *Engliſh* man of war put in there, in its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their paſſage. Such an opportunity was not to be miſſed: They accepted his offer with the greateſt joy, and in return made a *party* and entertainment for him, when he won *me* from my miſtreſs at a game of *brag*, the only game indeed at which he thought himſelf a match for her.

Though I had no reaſon to regret leaving her ſervice, my preſent change gave me no great pleaſure as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty, my new maſter being the captain, with whom I had left the *Spaniſh* coaſt, who had at length been made ſo happy, as to be ordered home.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His maſter is ſaluted by a ſight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR.

(CHRYSAL's *maſter having in the courſe of his voyage home given offence to his officers, by his prudential regard to his own ſafety; to obviate any bad conſequences which might attend their complaining to his ſuperiors, he reſolved to employ* CHRYSAL's *mediation in his favour, as ſoon as he ſhould arrive in* ENGLAND.—*Vol.* I. *Chap.* X.)

His arrival in *England* preſented him with a ſcene, that confirmed this reſolution, and made him wiſh he had not been in ſuch haſte to return. On his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men of war there drawn up around one ſhip, in which was diſplayed the dreadful ſignal of the execution of the commander. The ſight appalled his ſoul, conſcience anticipating the ſtroke of juſtice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate.

He had not time to brood over theſe gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on board him, with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he obeyed, in a ſtate of mind, ſcarce leſs unhappy, than that of the criminal.

As ſoon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy, in every face he met, was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleaſure in ſuch company. When he had anſwered a few general queſtions of courſe, he went away to the ſhip of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn ſome account of this ſhocking ſcene, for he had not had reſolution to make any enquiry about it; nor even to attend to the converſation

tion of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my maſter ſignified his curioſity, which his friend promiſed to gratify *over their bottle*, as ſoon as they ſhould be alone after dinner.

Accordingly, when *the coaſt was clear*, "You de-
"ſire information in an affair (ſaid he) that has given
"our corps the deepeſt wound we have ever received.
"The circumſtances are many, and myſterious; but
"I will ſtrive to give you a notion of it in as few
"words as poſſible, for it can be no pleaſure to either
"of us to dwell upon ſuch a ſubject.

"In the beginning of the war, ſoon after you went
"to *America*, the unfortunate man, who has this day
"fallen a ſacrifice to the humour of the times, was
"ſent out with a fleet to counteract the ſchemes of the
"enemy, and relieve a fortreſs of ours which they
"were then beſieging. (This was the purport of his
"*publick orders*; but it will appear to you preſently,
"that he muſt have received *private* ones, of a very
"different nature, from thoſe who at that time had the
"conduct of affairs.)

"Inſtead of making the expedition neceſſary to have
"carried his orders into execution with effect, he
"trifled away the time here, in ſuch a ſhameful man-
"ner, uſing every frivolous excuſe he could deviſe to
"delay his departure, that the voice of the publick
"was raiſed againſt him; and it was found neceſſary
"to appoint another to the command in his place in
"order to ſilence their clamour; but unfortunately for
"him, he ſailed the very day before his appointed ſuc-
"ceſſor was to have ſet out to ſuperſede him.

"The ſame dilatory conduct threw a damp upon
"every thing he attempted to do. He ſeemed re-
"ſolved upon nothing; but though he was inveſted
"with the fulleſt powers to act as he ſaw proper him-
"ſelf, called councils of war to deliberate upon every
"the moſt trifling occaſion, that he might have the
"ſanction of their advice to excuſe his neglect, and
"often direct diſobedience of his orders; for you well
"know,

" know, that *a council of war always ſpeaks the ſenſe* " *of the commander.*

" One inſtance of his proceeding in this manner will " be ſufficient to juſtify this remark. He had been " ordered to call at another fortreſs in his way, and " take from thence a reinforcement for the garriſon of " that which he was ſent to relieve: On his arrival " there, inſtead of demanding that reinforcement " peremptorily, as his orders impowered him, and " making the expedition, which the urgency of the " occaſion required, he ſhewed ſuch indifference to the " enterprize by his delays, and expreſſed ſuch diffi- " dence of his ſucceſs, that the commanding officer " took the alarm; and following his example, called " a council of war to conſider whether he ſhould ſend " it, which on mature deliberation he abſolutely re- " fuſed, on account of the danger of weakening his " own garriſon, in caſe it ſhould be attacked; where- " as, it was notorious that could never happen, if " this unhappy man did his duty, as the force he had " was ſufficient to keep the command of the ſea, and " prevent any ſuch attempt. But far from urging this " he quietly acquieſced in the officer's excuſe, and " ſailed away without the reinforcement, for which " alone he had been ordered to ſtop there.

" On the ſame principles, when at length he came " in ſight of the place, the ſiege of which was puſhed " with the greateſt vigour, he excuſed his ſending any " relief to it, on a pretence of the danger of entering " the harbour, as if any military operation could be " free from danger, and ſailed away to ſeek a fleet " of the enemy, which was coming to aſſiſt the " ſiege, and which he came up with ſooner than he " wiſhed.

" An engagement now was unavoidable; but, ſtill " he had it in his power to prevent any effect from it, " which he notoriouſly did, by trifling away his time " in vain unneceſſary *manœuvres*, and pretending to " come to action at a diſtance too great for him to do " any thing.

" The

" The enemy, whoſe intereſt it was to avoid an " engagement, in which their moſt ſanguine hopes " could not promiſe them ſucceſs, availed themſelves " of this conduct, and made their eſcape, after hav- " ing, from the ſuperiority which his *keeping aloof* in " this manner gave them, treated very roughly a part " of his fleet that had advanced with leſs caution, and " come really to action.

" This ſerved him as a pretence for calling a coun- " cil of war next day, by the advice of which inſtead " of purſuing the enemy, who had evidently fled from " him, or making any attempt to relieve the fortreſs " which was beſieged, obviouſly the firſt object of " his being ſent out, he returned directly to the other, " from which he was to have taken the reinforement, " as I mentioned before, to defend that from the " danger brought upon it ſolely by his own conduct, " leaving the former, deprived thus of every proſpect " of relief, to take its fate; and giving up the ho- " nour of his country by flying from an enemy, whom " he might have vanquiſhed, and who had fled from " him before.

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Conſequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary ſentence attempted to be reverſed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary perſons. The reaſon of this; and why it miſcarried. More myſteries. Juſt fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the conſequence of this affair to a certain corps.*

" THE conſequence of ſo ſtrange a conduct " was, the nation took fire; and with one " voice demanded ſatisfaction for ſuch a ſacrifice of " their intereſt and honour. He was therefore not " only deprived of his command, but alſo ſent home " a priſoner; and after ſuffering every indignity and

" abuſe

" abuſe which the rage of a licentious populace broken " looſe from all bounds could ſuggeſt, brought to his " trial, found guilty of *neglecting to do all in his power* " *to deſtroy the enemy*, and for that crime has this day " ſuffered the ſentence of the law; a ſentence not " more unexpected by him, and extraordinary in itſelf, " than in the manner it was paſſed; and afterwards " attempted to be reverſed, by thoſe who had paſſed " it, when they reflected on the danger of eſtabliſhing " a precedent, that might one day come home to " themſelves.

" For perſuaded (perhaps by their knowledge of " the true motives of his conduct) that nothing more " was meant by the trial, than to amuſe the publick, " they reſolved to act their parts in the farce, and " found him guilty, as I have ſaid, of ſuch a part " only of the charge againſt him, as common ſenſe " could never conceive puniſhable with death, it be- " ing impoſſible to acquit him abſolutely of the whole, " without involving themſelves in his guilt, by which " means, they expected to ſave both his life, and their " own credit. But ſuch *trimming* ſeldom anſwers; " *the tables were now turned*; and it was reſolved to " carry even this lame ſentence into execution, with " the utmoſt ſeverity.

" Alarmed at a meaſure, ſo contrary to their ex- " pectations, his judges were driven to their wit's " end; and from a provident regard to *themſelves* left " nothing unattempted to ſave *him*. They retracted, " as far as was in their power, their own judgment! " they petitioned the miniſtry! they applied to the " whole body of the legiſlature. They prayed! they " expoſtulated! they wept! but all was in vain. His " fate was determined; and they only drew upon " themſelves that contempt, which ſuch inconſiſtency " deſerved.

" From this general account of his conduct it muſt " have appeared to you, that he acted by *ſecret* or- " ders, directly oppoſite to his *publick* ones, as no " man however proſtituted in principle, however, in- " fatuated by fear, (neither of which, it was well " known, was his caſe) could otherwiſe poſſibly have

" acted

" acted in ſuch a manner, the inevitable conſequences " of which were diſgrace and death. But if any doubt " ſhould remain on your mind, from the inconſiſtency " of man's actions at different times, the leaſt atten- " tion to the following circumſtances will effectually " remove it.

" Repeated informations of the enemy's deſign upon " that place had been ſent to thoſe in power, for a " conſiderable time before; but no notice was taken " of them to reinforce the garriſon; or even order the " Officers, regularly belonging to it, to attend their " duty, till the ſiege was actually begun; when this " unfortunate man was ſent, but ſo late, that the " common impediments of contrary winds might very " poſſibly have delayed him ſo long as to defeat the " deſign of his going, even had he exerted himſelf " with the greateſt ardour.

" Had it alſo been really intended that he ſhould " reinforce the garriſon, a force proper for that pur- " poſe would have been ſent directly from home, with- " out ſubjecting him to the further delay of ſtopping " for it at another place, where it might not be to be " ſpared, as proved to be the caſe.

" And laſtly, had he not had ſecret reaſons, which " he thought ſufficient to juſtify his conduct, it is not " to be imagined that he would have waſted the time " before he ſailed; that he would have accepted the " refuſal of the commanding officer of the fortreſs, " from which he was to have taken the reinforcement; " that he would not have attempted at leaſt to throw " ſome relief into the place; and that he would not " have fought the enemy's fleet, when he had the " faireſt proſpect of defeating it; for the tenour of his " former life acquitted him as I have obſerved, of all " ſuſpicion of cowardice, or traiterous correſpondence " with the foes of his country.

" His conduct at, and after his trial, confirmed theſe " remarks. Depending on ſupport, from thoſe in " power, he neglected the only meaſure, prudence " could have ſuggeſted for his defence, which was to " have retorted the charge of his miſcarriage upon

" his

" his very accuſers, and perplexed the cauſe with " ſuch a variety of matter about *diſobedience to ſignals,* " *and breach of diſcipline,* as to blind the world, and " bewilder his judges, ſo that they ſhould be glad to " have acquitted him, if only to get rid of the plague " of the enquiry; a method, which experience had " ſhewn to be effectual, in as flagrant a caſe as his. " And even after he was condemned, his behaviour " proved that he expected a pardon to the laſt mo- " ment, for a crime which he had committed in obe- " dience to their orders. Why he did not produce " thoſe orders, in his vindication, muſt have been, " that they were only *verbal* ones; which in the " blind luſt of miniſterial confidence and favour, he " had been weak enough to take.

" The reaſon of his being ſo baſely deſerted is too " obvious. The adminiſtration of thoſe, who had " employed him, had been ſuch a ſeries of blunders, " (not to call it by a ſeverer name!) that they had " not only been ſupplanted by another ſet, who pro- " miſed better things; but were alſo obliged to give " him up, *as a ſin-offering*, to the rage of the people; " as protecting, or pardoning him would have implied " a participation of his guilt: And in this light the " other party viewed it ſo ſtrongly, that they exerted " all their ſtrength to have ſaved him, in hopes of " being able by his means to gain a clue, to guide " them through ſome of thoſe labyrinths of iniquitous " and falſe policy, which they ſuſpected, but could " not otherwiſe detect, to the entire overthrow of " their rivals.

" This ſo abſolutely reverſed the whole ſcene, that " they who ſhould have ſupported, now found them- " ſelves obliged to cruſh him, in their own defence, " which as it was the moſt popular meaſure, they " were ſtill able to do.

" There is but one thing more neceſſary for me to " add; and that is the motive for their giving him " ſuch ſecret orders; which, as far as reaſon can " judge in ſuch dark, confuſed myſteries, muſt have " been this.

" Provoked

" Provoked at the repeated inſults, and injuſtice of " the *French*, the miniſtry here had precipitately " plunged themſelves into a war, without being pre- " pared, or even determined to purſue it; and then " like a parcel of children who have exhauſted all their " ſtrength, and reſolution, in one ſpiteful aſſault, " ſtood in a ſtate of ſtupefaction, utterly at a loſs " how to proceed, or retreat; till rouzed at length " by the preparations and menaces of the enemy, they " unluckily blundered in their fright upon the wretch- " ed expedient of letting them take this fortreſs, that " for the recovery of it, they might have a pretence " for giving up to them thoſe places about which the " diſpute began; and ſo *botch up* a peace any way, to " get rid of a war, they found themſelves unable to " manage.

" The conſequence of this notable ſtroke of policy " was, the ſpirit of the people was inflamed to ſuch " a degree, by this diſgrace upon their arms, that " they have puſhed on the war with a reſolution, little " ſhort of madneſs; and the ſcheme, which the mi- " niſters had ſo wiſely laid for their eſcape, only ſealed " their ruin.

" This, my friend, is a ſhort but juſt ſketch of this " unfortunate affair, to which I ſhall only add one " circumſtance to prove what I ſaid of his being *ſa- " crificed to the humour of the times*. The officer who " commanded in the fortreſs which was beſieged, and " who in the defence of it had betrayed a want of " every qualification neceſſary for ſuch an office, *but " courage*, and had even let that be over-ruled by the " inſtances of his officers, who were tired of fatigues " and dangers from which they ſaw no proſpect of " relief, to ſurrender it at laſt, without any abſolute " neceſſity, was loaded with honours of every kind " in reward of a merit merely negative at beſt; that " is for not having done the very worſt in his power, " and ſurrendered it at firſt, without making any de- " fence.

" I have thus gratified your curioſity, in the beſt " manner in my power. If I have made any miſtakes, " they are not thoſe of intention; but have proceed-

" ed

" ed from the inability of reaſon to trace ſuch myſ-
" terious actions to their real motives. One obſerva-
" tion though, I know, I cannot be miſtaken in,
" which is that this affair has given *a wound to our*
" *corps*, (as I obſerved before) *which it can never re-*
" *cover*. For after ſuch an example, what officer, of
" any rank, can expect to eſcape ſhould he neglect to
" do his duty, in the fulleſt manner, however power-
" ful his private motives to the contrary may be?

" For my own part, I cannot ſay, it yet affects me
" much. I am poor; and therefore muſt puſh. If I
" ever have the good luck to be other, I know the
" conſequence; and will rather quit the ſervice, than
" hazard being ſhot, as I know muſt be any man's
" fate, who ſhall hereafter be found to fail in the
" performance of his duty, from a prudential regard
" to the preſervation of his life, or fortune; however
" great that fortune, or powerful his family." And
" ſo *here's to you, neck nor nothing* is now the word."

The effect which this whole account had upon my maſter may be eaſily conceived. He *pledged* his friend though without naming *the toaſt*; and aſſenting to his remarks, by an heavy ſigh, took his leave without ſaying a word.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. He gets a view of a court of* CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occaſion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimſical application of an old ſtory produces the ſtrange effect of putting a counſellor out of countenance. The neceſſity of abſolute power in ſome governments; with a common deciſion, by which nothing is decided.*

" AS ſoon as my maſter returned to his ſhip, he
" took *me* from his purſe, once more, and
" looking earneſtly at me, for ſome moments, " We
" muſt

" muſt part!" (ſaid he, with a ſigh) " we muſt part! " but I hope to good purpoſe. *Thou* only waſt the " cauſe of that conduct, which now gives me fear; " exert therefore thy influence equally, where I now " ſend thee; and thou wilt excuſe my fault, if it is " one. ——

" Tears, at the thought of loſing me, here choaked " his utterance. He gave me a laſt kiſs, and ſent me " directly away, in company with a conſiderable num- " ber more, to mediate his peace.

" As the delicate nature of this tranſaction required " ſome addreſs, he entruſted the management of it to " his purſer, who had convinced him, by many in- " ſtances, of his ſagacity in the methods of obtaining " an influence over the great *"

My new maſter's road leading through a city, where a matter of great moment was under judicial determination, he waited for the event to gratify a natural curioſity.

The affair was this. A *fore-maſt-man* in a *guard-ſhip*, lying in one of the neighbouring harbours had by repeated miſbehaviour in going clandeſtinely on ſhore contrary to the expreſs orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him *a dozen at the gang way*, in order to terrify others from following his example.

Inſtead of being reclaimed by this puniſhment, the fellow perſiſted to miſbehave in ſuch a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his diſpoſition, diſcharged him from the ſhip to avoid the pain of puniſhing him any more.

This was juſt what the wretch wanted. Accordingly he went directly to a proſtituted, *pettifogging* attorney, who had before ſet him on the ſcheme; and employed him to ſue the captain at law, for an aſſault, in puniſhing him in the harbour, where he had no power ſo to do.

In a country governed by laws, they muſt regularly take their courſe, in every inſtance however flagrant in its particular circumſtances.

After all the preliminary delays of practice, which grievous as they may in ſome circumſtances to be an individual,

* *Vol.* I.— *Page* 5. *Chap.* xi.

dividual, are yet the ſafety of the publick, the affair was now brought to a legal deciſion. You are too well acquainted with *the forms of law* to require a minute account of all which were obſerved in this caſe. But there was one incident which I cannot paſs over.

As this was a matter that importantly concerned the intereſt of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the *guard-ſhips*, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court, in the uſages of their ſervice.

One of thoſe, who had never ſeen a court of *civil judicature* before, but was a man of natural good ſenſe, and ſome reading, having liſtened to the unintelligible pleadings, and groſs exaggerations of *the council* on both ſides of the queſtion, eſpecially thoſe *hired* in the proſecution, till his patience was quite exhauſted, at length aroſe, and having obtained permiſſion from the judge to ſpeak, addreſſed himſelf to the court in theſe words.

" I am ſent here by thoſe, to whom the King has " entruſted the conduct of his navy to explain the " nature and rules of our ſervice to this court, in caſe " I ſee any danger of their forming a wrong judgment " of it, from inexperience in a matter ſo much out of " their way.

" The little gentleman yonder has ſpent ſo much " breath, and ſhewn ſuch great reading on the ſubject, " that I imagine it is proper for me to make him ſome " anſwer, which I ſhall do in as few words as poſ- " ſible, being not half ſo *long winded*, as he. But " firſt I muſt beg leave to tell him a ſtory, to con- " form to rule.

" I have read in a book, (for I perceive that com- " mon-ſenſe ſignifies nothing here, if not ſupported by " a quotation, it matters not whether to the purpoſe, " or not!) that a certain Philoſopher having declaimed " one day for a conſiderable length of time before *A-* " *lexander the Great*, at the head of his army, on the " duties of a general, the Emperor turned about to " *Parmenio*, one of his generals who ſtood near him, " and aſked him, what he thought of his ſpeech? —

" *Sire*,

" *Sire*, (anſwered *Parmenio*) my opinion is, that *I* " *never heard a fool talk ſo learnedly.*——

" I make no applications. All that I ſay on this oc- " caſion is, that I am ſure that gentleman has never " been at ſea; and conſequently knows nothing of the " ſervice, on which he has been haranguing with ſuch " vehemence and elocution. He has expatiated moſt " pathetically on the injuſtice of inflicting corporal pu- " niſhment, without a legal trial, and condemnation; " and flouriſhed on the danger of ſuch an invaſion of " liberty. Theſe to be ſure are fine words; but I " much doubt whether they are properly applied on " this occaſion. The moſt perfect form of government " is allowed to be *abſolute deſpotiſm*, as beſt calcu- " lated to work its effects without delay. In all the " communities in this world, I doubt if there is one, " where immediate obedience to the command of the " governour is ſo indiſpenſibly neceſſary to the ſafety " of the whole, or where individuals are ſo inſenſible to " every other motive to obedience but fear, as in a man " of war.

" I have myſelf the honour to command a ſhip, in " which I have five hundred men under me, the great- " eſt part of whom, (I am ſorry to ſay it) are the *out-* " *caſts* of human nature, as from ſome unhappy cir- " cumſtances is, and perhaps muſt always be the uni- " verſal caſe in our ſervice. Now as inſtances daily " occur, in which a moment's delay or heſitation to " execute my orders, though attended with the " greateſt difficulty, or moſt imminent danger, muſt " evidently hazard the loſs of the ſhip, and every life in " her; I deſire that gentleman to inform me how I am " to act, ſhould one of the men, whom I order, ſup- " poſe, to cut away a yard that's broke in the ſlings, " refuſe to go aloft, and tell me I have no right to pu- " niſh him, till he is regularly tried and found guilty! " Shall I admit of ſuch an anſwer, to be an example to " the reſt? Or ſhall I puniſh him with ſuch ſeverity " on the ſpot, by my own mere authority, as to terrify " any other from imitating him? The anſwer to this plain " queſtion will determine the affair under conſideration. " If it is ſaid that in the preſent caſe the ſhip's being in

" the harbour makes a difference, let us ſuppoſe her " on fire there, and that difference will vaniſh. In a " word, if the abſolute authority indiſpenſibly neceſſary " for carrying on our ſervice in ſome inſtances is at- " tempted to be abridged in any, it will of courſe be " at length diſputed in all, and the ſervice ruined. " All that can be done is to be cautious not to truſt it " in improper hands."

This method of reaſoning changed the face of the affair. The counſellor hung down his head, and ſlunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for publick liberty vaniſhed; and the jury ſimply *found the fact*, but left *the point* of law to be determined by the judges; ſo that after all this expence and trouble, matters remained in the ſame ſtate of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAP IX.

CHRYSAL's maſter joins a remarkable ſet of company. Their characters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Account of the enterprize on which his late maſter's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands.*

(THE purſer having, on his arrival in LONDON, *parted with* CHRYSAL *regularly, in the execution of the commiſſion entruſted to him by his captain;* CHRYSAL, NOW IN THE SHAPE OF A GUINEA, *after ſeveral changes of ſervice, and a variety of curious adventures, has fallen into the hands of a* PHYSICIAN *and* AUTHOR; *who, having ſhewn him many of the myſteries of the latter profeſſion, proceeds to introduce him into new ſcenes.—Vol.* I. *page* 122.

Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleaſing proſpects they opened to him, my maſter proceeded to *figure* as uſual in his variegated ſphere. Accordingly he deſcended from his *aerial citadel*, and going out, *to viſit his patients*, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a ſet of *criticks*, and *choice ſpirits*, *ſouls of*

ſentiment

ſentiment and fire, who were going that evening upon an expedition, that was to immortalize their names.

This was no leſs than to aſſume the modeſt power of making laws that ſhould affect the property of a number of their fellow ſubjects; the execution of which they were reſolved to enforce by the mild, and equitable means which the reſpectable legiſlature of the mob always uſe to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Thoſe, who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command, were *the actors* of *plays* and *interludes*, of which, as the works of *genius*, and calculated for the entertainment of *the idle*, they claimed the ſole, and abſolute rule.

You conclude from this, that they muſt have been perſons of learning, and large fortune, whoſe affluence gave them leiſure to attend to ſubjects, which their education qualified them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either *blanks in the Creation*, whom a ſuperficial ſmattering of letters had filled with ſuch an opinion of themſelves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of induſtry, as beneath their dignity, though at the ſame time they were barely able to ſubſiſt without it, by all the little ſhifts of œconomy; or tradeſmen, almoſt abſolutely illiterate, who from a prepoſterous ambition of hiding an ignorance, that was not any reproach to their ſtation, ſet up for the arbiters of taſte, on the ſtrength of a ſet of phraſes picked up at random, and of which they knew not even the meaning; and neglected the buſineſs, by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a ſhew of knowledge, that could be of no uſe to them.

When this illuſtrious ſet had ſufficiently conned their ſeveral parts, in the great enterprize which they were going to undertake, and raiſed their reſolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the ſcene of action, the Theatre; and calling for a *bill*, I was *changed* by my maſter to pay his *club*, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, who *changed* me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admiſſion.

Theſe changes of my ſervice however did not prevent

my ſeeing the proceſs of this extraordinary affair. On the contrary; as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full inſight into the nature, and myſteries of every part of that profeſſion.

I ſee you deſire to know my ſentiments on a ſubject, that has been canvaſſed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curioſity is natural, and ſhall be gratified at a proper time; but at preſent I muſt not interrupt the account of this tranſaction.

From the manner, in which thoſe ſelf-made legiſlators had talked, when together, of every circumſtance in the management of a theatre, and profeſſion of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to over-turn the whole preſent ſyſtem of the ſtage, and inſtitute another on principles directly oppoſite, according to their own ideas of perfection.

But that was not the caſe. Among all the errours and abuſes, againſt which they declaimed with ſuch vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought moſt intereſting to themſelves in particular. This was the right, which reaſon, and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the ſtage in *London*, before it had been brought by much labour and expence, to ſuch a degree of perfection as to attract the attention of the publick, it had been the cuſtom after a certain part of the repreſentation was over to admit perſons, for leſs than was paid at the beginning.

The obvious reaſon of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the moſt they could get, rather than keep the houſe empty. But when the paſſion for ſeeing plays aroſe to its preſent height, this expedient appeared to be no longer neceſſary, and therefore was diſuſed; a change which thoſe who conducted the entertainments of the theatre juſtified by alledging the enhanced ſalaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery, and decorations of the ſtage ſince the time when that cuſtom was introduced, which they ſaid required reimburſement, by a method, that could

could not juſtly be taken offence at, as *none were obliged to go, who did not approve of the terms.*

Such a meaſure was moſt alarming to theſe men of taſte, ſome of whom denied themſelves the pleaſure of going to the beginning of the performance, *becauſe they were not able to pay the full price*; as the others *could not get from behind their comptors before it was half ended*; and for theſe good reaſons both thought it the higheſt grievance to have a cuſtom aboliſhed, that had been ſo convenient to them.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the performance began, they all aroſe, and without any reſpect to the reſt of the audience, interrupted the players in the moſt outrageous manner, nor would deſiſt, till the managers ſhould promiſe to redreſs the grievance which affected them ſo ſeverely, and take half-prices as before.

This was too flagrant a violation of juſtice to be ſubmitted to, ſo ſuddenly. The managers therefore refuſed; upon which *theſe redreſſers of grievances* gave a looſe to their reſentment, at ſuch an inſtance of diſobedience to their authority; and tore the houſe to pieces, doing more damage to the proprietors, than their own entire worldly ſubſtance could repair.

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor.

WHEN theſe men of genius and publick ſpirit had thus gallantly accompliſhed their enterprize, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their reſentment, ſhould their orders not be obeyed.

The appearance of the houſe, after this ravage; and the looks of the actors, when they ventured to creep out of their hiding holes, ſeemed to realize the mimick ſcenes

uſually exhibited there. All was havock, deſolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, ſcepters, candleſticks, and broken benches were jumbled together: Sovereigns, and ſweepers, lords, link-boys, dutcheſſes, and cinder-wenches joined in one common lamentation of their fate.

This, however, laſted not long. Their hearts were not formed of ſtuff, for grief to make a deep impreſſion on: Nor were they ſo unaccuſtomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any miſchance. Their concern therefore wore off with their fright; and one of them, reſuming his character of turning every thing to ridicule, marched with ſolemn pace and ruefull countenance up to the motley ruins now collected into a heap, and with ſome droll variations, apt to the occaſion, *ſpouted* over them a tragick ſpeech, in all the emphaſis and trick of woe. The humour inſtantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied in cracking villainous jeſts on each other's *undoing*.

But the managers had ſuffered too ſeverely in their property to be in ſo merry a mood. They conſulted among themſelves, and *with the ſages of the law*, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redreſs for ſuch injuſtice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpoſe. Law gave way to licentiouſneſs; and they were obliged to ſubmit to the moſt intolerable of all tyrannies, *that of the mob*.

You are ſurprized that ſuch things ſhould be, in a country governed by equal, and eſtabliſhed laws. In ſpeculation it muſt ſeem ſtrange; but the leaſt acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconſiſtencies ſtill groſſer. There is ſomething however in the circumſtances of this caſe, which deſerves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which ſuch injuſtice could proceed.

When the ſyſtem of Divine worſhip, which is now profeſſed in theſe parts of the world, was firſt propoſed to mankind, the human mind was a ſlave to ſuperſtitions, which were a diſgrace to that portion of reaſon given for its direction.

By a perverſion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of thoſe ſuperſtitions, though profeſſedly deſigned

ſigned in honour of the Deity, was attended with *games*, and *ſcenical interludes*, in which the groſſeſt immoralities received the ſanction of Religion, and were practiſed openly as pleaſing to him. This was done to attach the paſſions of the multitude: and ſatisfy their curioſity with ſenſible repreſentations, in order to prevent their making rational enquiries into the grounds of thoſe ſuperſtitions, the principles of which were ſubſervient to the policy of the ruling powers.

A Religion inſtituted on purpoſe to reclaim man from immoralities and ſuperſtitions, and reſtore him to the dignity of his nature, neceſſarily ſtruck at every thing that conduced to their ſupport: Accordingly the perſons appointed to propagate it, exerted all their endeavours againſt thoſe games and interludes, both as a part of the ſuperſtitious worſhip which they wanted to aboliſh, and as in themſelves ſubverſive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened and made ſtill more alluring by every incentive art and pomp of expence.

For this purpoſe, reaſon, as well as Religion, ſupplied ready and powerful arguments; but not content to wait for the ſlow effect of theſe, they ſtrove to prejudice thoſe whom they could not perſwade; and to obviate the imitation of their example, raiſed an abhorrence to the perſons of all concerned in ſuch repreſentations, caſting them off from the rites of Religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of ſociety: A method, that in one reſpect defeated its own deſign; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others from following their example.

Nor did they ſtop here. By an errour too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded *from the abuſe, againſt the uſe* of the ſtage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors for the faults of the preſent.

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequence of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of the theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means for remedying this, and other abuſes.

HOWEVER the occaſion might there ſeem to juſtify this exceſs of zeal, when the cauſe ceaſed, the effect ſhould in reaſon have ceaſed alſo; and theſe general cenſures have been repealed. The ſuperſtitions which were the foundation of the firſt charge againſt the ſtage have been long aboliſhed; nor are the abſurdities and immoralities which gave offence to reaſon and virtue any longer practiſed there. On the contrary, the profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations at preſent is to inſinuate inſtruction under the pleaſing appearance of entertainment, to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by ſhewing the evils inſeparably attendant on vice; to regulate the paſſions by diſplaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance by holding it up to ridicule.

Now as experience has proved the ſtage capable of anſwering theſe great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into diſrepute. What more unjuſt than to conſign to infamy thoſe, who exert the fineſt powers of the human mind and body, to accompliſh this end in the moſt pleaſing manner? Yet ſuch is the abſurdity of man, that while perſons of the moſt exalted rank, and ſacred character not only frequent the theatre, but alſo compoſe works to be repreſented on it, and evidently value themſelves more on poſſeſſing the abilities requiſite to compoſe them, than on all their other diſtinctions in life, thoſe from whoſe action ſuch compoſitions receive their force and beauty,

are

are held in diſrepute, and ſubject to the ſevereſt diſadvantages only for acting them. If it is no diſgrace *to write a play*, why ſhould it be any *to act it?*

It is true the conſequences of this prejudice are not ſo ſevere here as in other countries, but ſtill they are ſuch as reaſon is aſhamed of. If actors are not literally excluded from the protection of the laws, they want ſupport to avail themſelves of that protection, as in the caſe, which gave riſe to theſe reflections! if they are not *actually (for literally they are)* excluded from the rites of Religion, they want encouragement to participate in them!

I ſee you are ready to object to the utility of the ſtage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it; and to juſtify the diſrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it aroſe ſolely from their profeſſion. But a moment's reflection would ſuggeſt anſwers to both theſe objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the ſtage, ſurely the blame ſhould fall on thoſe, who have a legal power to prevent ſuch abuſe of the inſtitution of it! If the actors are immoral in their lives, ſhould it not be conſidered that they are prejudged from their profeſſion; and deprived of one of the ſtrongeſt inducements to virtue, that is *reputation*, before they are proved to be guilty of vice.

The conſequence of this is, that too few enter into the profeſſion, till after they have loſt their reputation, or are driven by mere neceſſity; by which means they reflect that diſgrace upon it, which they are thought to ſuffer from it; and as they are ſenſible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all poſſibility of recovering or preſerving it by the moſt careful deportment, they become deſperate, and proceed till they even loſe the ſenſe of unavailing ſhame.

Whereas, if a different conduct was obſerved to them! if the brand of reprobation was taken off, and the profeſſion eſtabliſhed in that credit, which the abilities indiſpenſibly neceſſary to eminence in it deſerve; Genius would be no longer damp'd by appre-

henſion of reproach: More perſons of good character would not ſcruple going on the ſtage, as they could preſerve it there; nor vice ſeem to receive encouragement from publick favour, *becauſe from this circumſtance unhappily too often entangled with merit*; but the life of the actor would reflect the ſentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example.

Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All neceſſary would be to refuſe admiſſion on the ſtage to all, *notorious for vice of any kind*; to baniſh from it *ſuch as ſhould become ſo after, however eminent in their merits*; and *to ſupport the profeſſion by the civil power*, againſt the tyranny of the mob, ſo that the lives and properties of all concerned in it ſhould be ſecure from ſuffering ſuch licentious outrage, and injuſtice, as no other ſubjects are expoſed to; and as are equally a reproach and inſult to good government and common ſenſe.

Nor need it be apprehended that this would make them inſolent, or ſlacken their endeavours to pleaſe. Their very being depends on publick favour, the bare with-holding of which is puniſhment ſufficiently ſevere; as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmoſt abilities, and always obſerve proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know that if they are neglected, they cannot live: On the contrary, it would enable them to riſe to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched neceſſity of proſtituting their own judgment to pleaſe the groſs taſte of their tyrants.

Many other arguments might be alledged againſt this grievous, and ſhameful abuſe, but what I have ſaid is ſufficient to convince candid reaſon; and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

The ſyſtem of policy by which CHRYSAL's *maſter governed his ſtate. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reaſon why ſo few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the preſent ſtate of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from ſucceſs. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other.*

THE day after this great affair was *thus equitably* ſettled, on *the treaſurer*'s making up his week's account, I came into the poſſeſſion of the *manager*, who having ſome occaſion for money, put *me* into his pocket.

The meaſures of my new maſter's government in his little empire were the ſtrongeſt burleſque on the policy of the world, the greateſt ſovereign in which had not more intrigues *of ſtate* to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealouſy of the ſeveral candidates for his *royal* favour.

But all this buſtle did not embarraſs him in the leaſt. He had the addreſs to *play off* one party againſt another; and *by never engaging himſelf particularly to any, was able to manage all.* A method, by the bye, that might ſuggeſt an hint not unuſeful to politicians in an higher ſphere.

But the part of his conduct that was moſt curious, and gave me the greateſt pleaſure, was his manner of *parrying* the attacks of the *authors* who were continually bringing him their works for repreſentation on the ſtage, of which I had an opportunity of ſeeing many ſtriking inſtances.

As it is evidently the intereſt of the manager of a theatre, to exhibit thoſe performances, whoſe merit is moſt likely to gain the approbation of the publick; and as no man, who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition,

exhibition, can be ſuppoſed to want judgment to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourſe between them; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the ſtrongeſt appearances of reaſon.

The repreſentation of a new piece neceſſarily puts the manager to ſome expence, and much trouble. If you add to this the natural anxiety about ſucceſs, *for merit is often rejected by caprice, or perſonal prejudice*, you will not wonder that he ſhould be cautious what he brings upon the ſtage; and prefer acting old ones, unattended with theſe inconveniences, while the publick will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reaſon, why ſo few new pieces are performed; and not any decline of poetical genius to produce them; it being certain that there are as many good plays written now, as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of thoſe times lie together before you, and raiſe your opinion to the happy days which produced them: But if you conſider the long intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now loſt in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not ſo great reaſon to complain of the preſent decline of genius, as you may have imagined.

I do not by this mean, that every one who pretends to write is poſſeſſed of that genius; or that all the pieces offered to the ſtage are proper for repreſentation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indiſpenſible to ſucceſs in ſuch attempts, make them every day in defiance of reaſon; and ſtrive to obtrude upon the publick works which are a reproach to common ſenſe.

The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loſs how to ſpend his time; or wants to raiſe a little money, down he ſits without more adoe, and writes a play. The conſequence of this is, that the very reaſons which made him turn poet, neceſſarily preclude him from ſucceſs. *Idleneſs* prevents that care, that *limæ labor*, which alone can make a performance proper for publick repreſentation; and *diſtreſs* depreſſes the imagination; and

and hinders its riſing to that *happy boldneſs*, which is the eſſence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from intereſted motives are often to blame for rejecting *good* pieces; poets (or thoſe who would be thought ſuch) are much oftner culpable for offering them *bad* ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occaſions the difficulty in their intercourſe. But in this the conteſt is not equal. The word of the manager is deciſive; while the poet has nothing left, but to vent his reſentment in unavailing (and often unjuſt) complaints, and abuſe, in which thoſe who have leaſt right are always loudeſt; for enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the Ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all, who preſume to find fault with it.

But ſevere as it muſt be to ſuffer this, it is not the greateſt difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not ſatisfied with the civil refuſal of affected delays and excuſes, they muſt have a direct anſwer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to ſupport by ſuch arguments as muſt give him pain, if he has either politeneſs or good-nature; though after all, inſtead of convincing them, he only gets their's and their friends ill-will, and arms all their tongues againſt him.

It is not to be doubted but the *evaſions* which managers uſe to *ſhift off good* pieces are as groſly offenſive to moral propriety, truth and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of *bad* ones can poſſibly be to reaſon; but as I did not happen to be witneſs to any inſtances of them, I ſhall confine my account to the latter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſits in judgment on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the effects of.*

THE important morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of the manager was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed to come there for his deciſive anſwer.

Accordingly, as ſoon as he had breakfaſted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for, ſome time by one of thoſe aſpiring genius's, who ſacrifice the ſolid happineſs of independance, to the vain ambition *of being well with the great:* ſubmitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in publick places, or an invitation to their tables; to enhance their welcome at which, and conſume time they know not how to make better uſe of, they fall upon this wiſe expedient of turning poet.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite addreſs, and taken their ſeat with proper ceremony, the poet opened the buſineſs. "Well, Sir," (ſaid he with a ſmile of ſelf-complacence) "You have "peruſed that trifle! what is your opinion? Heh! "don't you think it will do?

"Sir," (anſwered my maſter, with the ſmooth ſimper of a courtier) "you do it injuſtice by calling it a trifle! "the piece has a great deal of merit; and reads very "prettily in many places; but I fear it is not quite ſo "proper for the ſtage!"——

"How, Sir! not proper for the ſtage! pray, Sir, "where

"where does the impropriety lie? Several perſons of the "firſt rank have read it, and found no ſuch thing. *His* "*Grace* ſaid it abounded with the *vis comica* Lord "*Taſtely* was charmed with the *Attick ſalt* ; and *Sir* "*Courtley* admired the elegance of the diction Pray, "Sir, where then can the impropriety lie? They are "allowed to be judges." —

—" Pardon me, Sir, I do not preſume to call their "judgment in queſtion, in the leaſt. But—a—"

—" And why then ſhould you heſitate to receive it? "They will ſupport it, with all their intereſt."—

" That, Sir, I do not doubt. But—ſtill, Sir,—the " town"——

"—The town, Sir! and pray what of the town? Is " the judgment of the town to be put in competition " with theirs?"——

" No, Sir! by no means! but ſtill the town is a " very formidable, and arbitrary judge ; and will not ad- " mit its authority to be diſputed, in ſuch matters as " this."——

—" And pray, good Sir, what objections can the " judicious town, or you, its learned advocate, " make?"——

—" Sir, you impoſe a very diſagreeable taſk upon " me! I had much rather be excuſed."——

" I do not in the leaſt doubt that, Sir ; but my " friends inſiſt upon a direct anſwer. Either receive " the play, or ſay why you will not."——

—" Sir, I ſhould be very ſorry to give offence to " any gentleman ; but ſince you inſiſt upon my opinion, "Do not you think, Sir, the plot is too—too—too " domeſtick? Are not the intrigues and tricks of ſer- " vants too low a ſubject for polite entertainment?"—

—" How, Sir! have you any objection to ſervants? " Do not they make a principal part in all our modern " comedies? Are the *Jeremy's*, and *Scrubs*, and *Phillis's*, " and a thouſand others to be rejected becauſe they are " ſervants?"——

—" No, Sir! but conſider they are not the principal " characters ; nor does the plot turn upon them. " They come in, as it were, by accident ; and indeed " except in the inſtances you have mentioned, and

" perhaps

" perhaps a very few more, they had much better be " left out. It ſhews a groſſneſs of taſte to ſtoop to " them for entertainment."——

—" And do not I introduce the maſters, and miſ- " treſſes too, as well as the ſervants? Are there not " country-ſquires, and town fops, and fine ladies?"—

" Yes, Sir, you do introduce them, but in a ſub- " ordinate light; and meerly to be the dupes of their " ſervants, without any buſineſs, or importance of " their own."——

—" And pray, Sir, in what other light do moſt " maſters appear? Hah! hah! hah!—Well then it " ſeems all your objections are to the fable. You have " nothing to ſay againſt the ſentiments, and dic- " tion."——

—" The ſentiments, Sir, may be very proper; and " the diction ſuited to them; but you muſt be ſenſible " that the former objection affects them all equally. " The characters are too low; and the ſentiments and " diction conſequently too coarſe."——

" Sir,—Sir,—Sir,—I ſhall not enter into any farther " arguments with you. *His Grace* bids me tell you he " inſiſts upon your receiving it; or giving him ſuch " reaſons, as he ſhall think ſatisfactory, which muſt be " very different from thoſe inſignificant cavils."——

—" His Grace need not exert his authority to influ- " ence my obedience. The leaſt hint of his pleaſure " were ſufficient; but unluckily I am engaged for the " whole ſeaſon; quite *full*."——

—" *Full!* why did you not tell me ſo at firſt?"——

—" Becauſe you inſiſted on having my opinion."—

—" Very well, Sir! I ſhall let his Grace and all " my friends know how you behaved. Let me have " the play! impertinent, inſolent, ignorant puppy!" muttered he, as he went out.

" So" (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as he was gone) " I have now made him my enemy for ever. As for " his *noble friends*, they are above troubling themſelves " about any thing of the kind, and give him leave to " mention their names, only to get rid of his importu- " nity."

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL's *maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.*

THE laſt poet was ſcarce down ſtairs, when a footman *announced* the entrance of another.

My maſter did not think it neceſſary to obſerve ſo much ceremony with him, as he had done with the former, but told him directly that he could not receive his piece.

Such a ſentence ſtruck the poet *all of an heap*. He was unable to ſpeak for ſome moments; but recovering himſelf at length, "Not receive it, Sir!" (ſaid he) "you ſurprize me. Pray, Sir, why ſo?"——

"I am very loth to find fault, Sir!" (anſwered my maſter) "But you ſeem to be utterly unacquainted with "all *the laws of the drama.*"

—"The laws of the drama! they are but art; I "write from nature. Theſe laws have been long laid "aſide. *Shakeſpear* wrote without laws."——

—"So much the worſe. But he is a dangerous ex- "ample to imitate. The local, temporary laws of the "antient drama are laid aſide, it is true; but not the "immutable, general laws of propriety, and reaſon. "Your fable is inconnected, improbable, and unaffect- "ing."——

—"How, Sir! unaffecting! Can the fall of a mighty "empire be ſaid to be unaffecting?"——

—"No,

—" No, Sir! But the deſcription of it moſt cer-
" tainly may, if not drawn with judgment, and force.
" And then your characters are ill ſupported; and your
" ſentiments and language loſt in the clouds."—

—" What, Sir! can the ſentiments of Kings and
" Princes be too ſublime?"

—" There is a wide difference between being ſublime,
" and ſwollen out of nature."——

—" But what objection can you make to the language,
" Is it not raiſed with *epithets*, and *metaphors*, and all
" the figures of poetry?"——

—" Good Sir! poetical figures in poor language look
" like embroidery on a blanket. They only make its
" poverty ridiculous. Beſide your *ſtalking in their ſtilts*,
" betrays you into many a ſtumble in the dirt. Your
" figures frequently fly in the face of common ſenſe,
" and break through every rule of grammar."——

—" Well, Sir! I ſhall conſider of theſe particulars.
" The great objection I have heard made to modern
" plays is there want of buſineſs: But this can never
" be charged to mine. There is a *ghoſt*, and a battle;
" and a king dethron'd. Buſineſs enough and enough,
" I am ſure."——

—" Ghoſts and battles, Sir, it is true, are ſometimes
" introduced with ſucceſs; but then it muſt be by a maſ-
" ter in the art, elſe they have a very contrary effect."—

—" I apprehend that the aim of tragedy is to work
" upon the paſſions. In this I believe you cannot ſay
" I have fail'd. The diſtreſs is truly great."——

—" Diſtreſs when out of character loſes the appea-
" rance of reality, and becomes ridiculous. A king in
" an alms-houſe, and a queen begging from door to
" door, are images which ſink into burleſque."——

—" It is very well, Sir! you may ſay what you pleaſe,
" but I am ſatisfied it is not want of merit in my play
" that makes you refuſe it. You daily act much worſe.
" If it had been recommended to you by ſome lord,
" you would have found none of theſe faults; but merit
" may ſtarve without intereſt to ſupport it now a days.
" This is fine encouragement to genius truly; and the
" publick is like to be well entertained while ſuch men

" have

" have it in their power to refuſe every thing that does " not happen to pleaſe themſelves."——

Saying this he ſnatched up his play, leaving my maſter to pleaſe himſelf with the proſpect of being *criticized upon in a news paper*, and pulled to pieces in a ſcurrilous pamphlet.

He had not time to indulge theſe reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee.

As ſoon as he was ſeated, " I have read over your ' work with great care ;" (ſaid my maſter)" and am ſorry " to ſay, I think it improper for the ſtage."——

—" Pray, Sir, why ſo "? (anſwered the poet, with an air of importance) " It is written ſtrictly according to " the rules of the drama ; and enriched with the ſub- " limeſt ſentiments of the antients."——

—" Sir, I am ſenſible of its merit ; as well as of the " great learning of the author: But the taſte of the times " requires entertainment of a different kind."——

"—Surely compliance with a vitiated taſte will not " juſtify the breach of rules, taken originally from na- " ture, and eſtabliſhed for ſo many ages."——

"— I neither diſpute the original juſtice, nor the an- " tiquity of them : But I apprehend that the latter in a " great meaſure deſtroys the preſent force of the former. " The cuſtoms of mankind, the part of nature that " comes within the province of the drama, are ſo " changed ſince the eſtabliſhment of thoſe rules, that it " would be moſt abſurd to exact obedience to them now. " Beſide, may it not be ſaid, without violation of the " reſpect due to antiquity, that experience in a great " length of time may have made many improvements " in thoſe rules. The infancy of every art is weak."—

"— But whatever change may have happened in the " cuſtoms of the world, truth ſtill remains the ſame, " and the genuine ſentiments of nature cannot diſ- " pleaſe."—

"— Very true ! but ſtill they may not always be re- " ceived with equal pleaſure, in the ſame garb. Un- " impaſſioned ſentiment, however juſt and ſublime, " works not the effects deſigned by the drama, whoſe " aim is to convey inſtruction and pleaſure at the ſame " time, by an immediate addreſs to the paſſions."—

" Is

"— Is it poſſible, that you can be an advocate for "the irregular monſters, which at preſent diſhonour "the ſtage?"——

"— As for irregularity, I look upon it to be but an "imaginary defect. Though even if it were otherwiſe, "I am the ſervant of the publick, and obliged to find "entertainment for their taſte, be it what it will. If "you would but conform"———

"— No, Sir! that I never will, againſt reaſon and "the antients. I ſee you are prejudiced, and therefore "ſhall not argue with you any longer. But I ſhall not "acquieſce in ſilence. I will publiſh the performance, "without being diſcouraged by your refuſal, and appeal "to the judgment of the learned."—

He then marched off with a ſtately pace, and my maſter looking after him, "There again" (ſaid he, ſhrug- "ging his ſhoulders) I ſhall now have the ghoſts of *So-* "*phocles*, and *Ariſtotle*, and all the doughty antients "raiſed to haunt me."—

As he ſaid this, a perſon entered whoſe whole appearance ſpoke diſtreſs. He approached my maſter bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he ſpoke: "I have made bold to wait upon you, Sir!" (ſaid he) "but if you are not at leiſure, will call another "time."—

"Pray, Sir, ſit down;" (replied my maſter, with a ſmile of encouragement) "I have looked over your "work, and am concerned that it is not in my power "to receive it; as I ſhould be ſincerely glad to ſerve "you. But in this, it is not poſſible. I muſt be plain "with you.—You ſeem to want every poetical ta- "lent."—

"I thought, Sir," (returned the poet, ſcarce able to collect ſpirits enough to ſpeak to him) "that the buſi- "neſs of tragedy was to work upon the paſſions! I "depended entirely on the diſtreſs."—

"— Very true, Sir! But there are other paſſions, "beſide pity to be applied to; nor is poverty a proper "diſtreſs to work upon them. Severe as it is to be felt, "it affects but little in repreſentation. The upper "ranks of life know not what it is; and thoſe who do "are deſirous to keep the thought at a diſtance; and

"conceal

" conceal a knowledge they are aſhamed of. The mind " muſt be properly prepared to feel for another. The " deſcription of a famine would affect but little after " a feaſt."

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burſt into tears; and was departing without being able to make any reply. My maſter felt his diſtreſs; tho' he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumſtances, nor give up an evening's entertainment to relieve an author's indigence; and waiting on him to the door, ſlipped a couple of guineas into his hand; when it fell to my lot to change my ſervice.

I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart ſo ſtrongly, as on this occaſion. The poet kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance; and forgetting for a moment all his diſtreſſes, went to a coffee-houſe and *changed* me to pay for his breakfaſt; " where I was immediately *borrowed* " at the bar, by an officer, who was going to dine with " his general, and wanted money to give his ſervants." *Vol.* I. — *Page* 116.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſwades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctors attention to the murdereſs.*

(CHRYSAL, *after having ſeen ſeveral ſtriking ſcenes, in the courſe of an extenſive circulation, is at length carried to an horſe-race, where he is initiated in ſome of the myſteries of the turf.*)

" It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the bye match- " es, that I was *loſt* that evening to the nobleman, as I " laid,

" ſaid, in whoſe poſſeſſion I happened to remain till the " end of the meeting." *Vol.* II.— *Page* 96.

As it was late in the evening when my maſter arrived in *London*, he reſolved to indulge himſelf for that night in the embraces of a tender hearted female, whom he *picked up* in the ſtreet, (for he was no way nice in his amours,) as he walked from the inn, where he alighted, to his own houſe, in order to ſtretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences paſſed upon this occaſion. When his lordſhip had made his miſtreſs *nobly* drunk, *by the way of refining his pleaſure*, the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where awaking about midnight, he was ſurpriſed to find her cold, and lifeleſs in his arms. After ſome fruitleſs efforts to move her, he ſtarted out of bed in a fright, and called up all his ſervants; who perceiving that ſhe was not actually dead, took ſuch pains to recover her, that ſhe at length opened her eyes, and ſtaring wildly around her for ſome moments, " Where am I?" (ſaid ſhe) " Are " theſe the regions of the damn'd? For thither only " can ſuch ſelf-murdering wretches, as I am, go."—— Then ſeeing his lordſhip, whoſe curioſity had brought him to the bed-ſide, " and are you dead too?" (continued ſhe, wringing her hands and weeping moſt paſſionately) " O why did I not confine my rage to " myſelf? Why did I add your murder to my " own, to plunge my ſoul ſtill deeper in perditi- " on?"——

This ſurprized all preſent. The ſervants who were indifferent whether it was true or falſe, imagined ſhe only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herſelf, ſoothing her with expreſſions of tenderneſs, and telling her ſhe was not dead, but would ſoon be very well: But my maſter was too nearly concerned to think ſo coolly of the matter.

" What is that you ſay?" (ſaid he trembling in horrour) " What is it you ſay about murder? There is " no one murdered here."

" How!" (anſwered ſhe, fixing her eyes eagerly upon him) " Is it poſſible, that I am ſtill alive? And " that you alſo live? It cannot be! the poiſon which " I ſwallowed this night, and in which you ſhared too " largely,

" largely, cannot have miſſed of its effect. But ſoft: " its operation now begins! that pang!——oh!—— " that pang beſpeaks the near approach of death!— " O mercy!—O cry for mercy on your ſins!"——

" What poiſon?" (interrupted he, terrified almoſt to diſtraction) " What poiſon have I ſhared in? Speak! " tell me directly, or"——

" Spare your threats, my lord," (ſaid ſhe, with a compoſure in her looks and manner that perſwaded every one preſent ſhe was in her ſenſes) " ſpare " your threats to a wretch, whom death will ſoon deli- " ver from your power; and forgive a crime, that " proceeded from deſpair. Wearied of the miſeries of " this life, I this night reſolved to put an end to it, " and for that purpoſe, though on another pretence, " procured a doſe of poiſon from a Chymiſt's appren- " tice, who on giving it to me, ſaid it was ſufficient to " kill twenty of the ſtrongeſt men alive: And this " poiſon did I take an opportunity to put into the laſt " bottle of wine, when you went out of the room, de- " termined to ſacrifice one man to my revenge for the " injuries I had received from the ſex: Though after I " had done it, my heart relented; but you inſiſted on " my drinking, and fear of your reſentment prevented " me from making a diſcovery, that would have ſaved " us both from this unhappy"—At theſe words, ſhe fell into convulſions ſo ſtrong that every one, who ſaw her, thought ſhe was really in the agonies of death.

The ſituation of my maſter, at this ſight, may be eaſi- ly conceived. He inſtantly felt every pain, that poiſon could produce; and falling on the floor, roar'd aloud in anguiſh of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confeſſing all the ſins of his life, to the ſer- vants who ſtood around him.

As ſoon as they had raiſed him up and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope aroſe at his finding he did not immediately die. " What!" (exclaimed he) " is every one combined againſt me? Am I to periſh for " want of aſſiſtance? Will no body even call me a " phyſician? Perhaps I might yet be ſaved, were pro-

" per

" per means applied! will no body call me a phy
" ſician?"——

On his ſaying this, every one was running to obey him, the ſight of which threw him into new diſtreſs. " O wretch that I am!" (exclaimed he) " and ſo I " am to be left alone! to periſh for want even of a " drop of water! is it not enough for ſome of you to " go; and not all to deſert me in this baſe, this barba- " rous manner?"——This ſeemed to reſtore them to their ſenſes; and accordingly while ſome went to call the doctors, the reſt ſtaid to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will ſoon be gathered together. He was immediately ſurrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty, (for as he had not named any one in particular, his ſervants to ſhew their care had ſummoned all they knew of) who taking the account he gave them of his being poiſoned for truth, proceeded inſtantly to practiſe upon him every method they had ever heard of being uſed in ſuch a caſe, in hope that ſome one of them might take effect. He was cup'd, bled, and bliſtered; vomited, clyſtered, and purged, in the ſpace of two hours; the doctors ſagaciouſly diſcovering new ſymptoms of the poiſon, every new remedy they tried.

When they found that beyond their expectations he had ſtrength enough to out-live all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm, to take a ſweat, comforted him with hopes of his recovery, in conſequence of their ſkill and care.

While they waited *patiently* for this important criſis, ſome of them happened to think of the poor murderess, who had been neglected all this time, and now lay in a ſwoon, the convulſions having gone off, as her ſtrength failed.

On hearing her name mentioned, his lordſhip to ſhew his Chriſtian charity, and prove the ſincerity of the repentance and amendment, which he vowed in caſe his life ſhould be mercifully ſpared, deſired that they would do ſomething for the unhappy creature, if ſhe was ſtill alive. This was ſufficient to attach their compaſſion and care. They anſwered with one voice, that

that it was a pity to let her periſh, without even attempting to ſave her, and praiſing his lordſhip's goodneſs, prepared to try ſome experiments upon her alſo, if only to do ſomething for their fee.

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murdereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THEIR practice upon this new ſubject however was cut ſhort by a ſucceſs, more ſpeedy than they deſired; their firſt operation of bleeding bringing her directly to herſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe perceived what had been done, and recovered ſtrength to ſpeak, "Good God," (ſaid ſhe) "what is the meaning of this? Who can have been ſo "inhuman as to bleed me, when it is known to be "ruin, in my diſorder?"

"In your diſorder!" (ſaid one of the doctors with a contemptuous frown) "what diſorder? Have you not "poiſoned yourſelf? and what is ſtill worſe, his lord-"ſhip alſo; who now lies in the ſame deſperate con-"dition with you, and has from his unmerited good-"neſs directed us to take this care of you; though if "we can ſave you from this death, it muſt be to ſuffer "one more ignominious."

"I poiſon myſelf!" (interrupted ſhe, raiſing herſelf up in the bed) "I poiſon his lordſhip! What can you "mean by this? I underſtand you not; and am inno-"cent, even in thought, of any ſuch crimes. Explain "yourſelf therefore; and do not ſport with the miſery "of a wretched creature, who has more real diſtreſſes "than ſhe is able to bear, without the addition of ima-"ginary guilt."

This amazed them all. They ſtood looking at each other for ſome moments, wrapt in reflections, not the moſt pleaſing, on the conſequences which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordſhip in the manner they had done, in caſe what ſhe ſaid ſhould prove true. At length on her repeating her intreaties, one of them condeſcended to inform her of every thing that had paſſed, dwelling particularly on the deſperate condition his lordſhip had been in, and the various methods they had uſed to relieve him.

Weak and diſpirited as you muſt ſuppoſe her to have been, ſhe was ſcarce able to refrain from laughter at this account. "A deſperate condition he muſt "be in now indeed;" (ſaid ſhe) "whatever he was "in before! but if you will give me leave to ſlip on "my gown and go to him, I'll ſoon compleat his cure."

This was a ſtep ſo contrary to all rules of practice, that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them obſerving the impropriety of liſtening to the ravings of a perſon, whoſe head muſt certainly be diſtracted by the effects of the poiſon, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful, for what ſhe had juſt ſaid.

But ſhe was delivered from this diſcipline, by the appearance of his lordſhip, who on one of his ſervants carrying him the pleaſing news of what ſhe ſaid, had found ſtrength enough to run to her, and throwing himſelf on the bed, "O my deareſt girl!" (exclaimed he, claſping his arms around her neck) "am I not "then a dead man? Tell me! tell me the truth, "directly! am I not a dead man?"——

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels, in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her, he had ſuffered. Shocked at the thought, ſhe held up her hands in a ſupplicating poſture, and imploring his pardon for what ſhe had been the involuntary cauſe of, informed him that ſhe was ſubject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever ſhe drank to any exceſs, as his lordſhip had compelled her to do that night, much, he

he muſt have been ſenſible, againſt her inclination, had ſhe dared to refuſe him; and that when ſhe was in thoſe fits, which laſted till the effects of the liquor went off, ſhe was apt to rave, and ſpeak every extravagance and inconſiſtency that could come into a diſordered head.

The manner in which ſhe ſpoke left not the leaſt room for doubt. All his fears were inſtantly removed, his joy at which obliterated the remembrance of every thing he had ſuffered in mind and body, and he not only forgave her, but alſo made her an handſome preſent in recompence for her happy news.

But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the ſevereſt terms, for their ignorance and preſumption in putting him to ſuch torture, and tearing his conſtitution by ſuch violent means, before they were certain of his ailment; and without permitting them to alledge in their vindication his aſſertions of what he felt, and intreaties not to leave any thing unattempted, that they thought might poſſibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without giving them a farthing for all their trouble.

I have ſeen that you were ſurprized at his lordſhip's indelicacy, and diſregard to his health, in having an amour with a creature in ſo low a ſtate of infamy and wretchedneſs, as to walk the ſtreets to offer herſelf to caſual proſtitution; as well as at her expreſſing herſelf in a manner ſo much above her appearance, and circumſtances. But the leaſt acquaintance with the world would eaſily account for both.

When once a woman falls from chaſtity, the characteriſtick virtue of her ſex, the deſcent to this loweſt degree of human miſery is natural, and ſeldom, very ſeldom fails to come of courſe. The kept-miſtreſs, who this day ſhines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will in a few months ſpend the night in the ſtreets, for want of an habitation to hide her head, and without cloaths to ſhelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty, that firſt recommended her is worn off; *for no proſperity that is not eſtabliſhed on virtue can laſt.* Theirs indeed is of all the moſt fleeting; the vice which is their ſupport affecting their own conduct by example, and making them laviſh profuſely, what they get from profuſion.

Such had been the caſe of this female. She had been entitled by birth and education to better hopes; but vice had blaſted all, and left her only the reflection of what ſhe might have been, to aggravate her preſent wretchedneſs.

As to him! his health poſſibly was in a ſtate not worthy of regard! and for his delicacy! the indiſcriminate vague intercourſe of the ſexes effectually deſtroys that, as well as the ſentimental attachment, which refines the deſire of rational beings, and diſtinguiſhes it from the groſs appetite of brute animals, ſo that in general nothing farther than the gratification of that appetite is now ſought; and as that can be effected by any one object, as well as another, whether it is found in a palace or a brothel makes no difference, with thoſe, who profeſs themſelves men of pleaſure. The ſex is all they ſeek, without regard to any qualifications; and conſequently, when their appetites are gratified, they deſert the objects of them with the ſame indifference, as they took them.

But to return to my maſter. It was ſome time as you may imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair; but I remained not with him ſo long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumſtance they could invent. This brought all his acquaintances to have a laugh at him upon the occaſion; to one of whom he *loſt* me that afternoon on a bet, at a race, between two of the *maggots*, which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary ſociety. Some reflections not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules.*

THE next morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he ſet out upon a party of pleaſure of a moſt extraordinary nature. This was to be admitted into a ſociety, formed of a number of perſons of the firſt diſtinction, in burleſque imitation of the religious ſocieties, which are inſtituted in other countries.

I have already told you, that I ſhall not give any opinion in religious matters. But whether the original inſtitution of ſuch ſocieties was right or not, as the motive of them was the worſhip of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule moſt certainly muſt be wrong; the mind of man ſeldom being acute or attentive enough to diſtinguiſh between matters, which to appearance are ſo intimately connected, as the mode of worſhip, and the object of it; but generally involving either in the diſregard affecting the other. In the preſent inſtance indeed, the diſregard was deſignedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the ſcene in which my maſter was going to act a capital part, it is neceſſary to trace the whole from its original.

A perſon of a flighty imagination, and who poſſeſſed a fortune that enabled him to purſue thoſe flights, cloyed with common pleaſures, and ambitious of diſtinguiſhing himſelf among his companions, had reſolved to try if he could not ſtrike out ſomething new, that ſhould at the ſame time pleaſe his own taſte, and do honour to his genius.

The meer gratifications of ſenſe, in their utmoſt extent, not anſwering his deſign, he had recourſe to the

aſſiſtance of imagination to enhance them. The great *butt*, againſt which men of pleaſure play off all their wit is Religion. Their reaſons, for a practice ſo groſs, are obvious. As the voice of conſcience will ſometimes intrude upon them ſo as to pall their higheſt pleaſures, in the very moment of enjoyment, their firſt endeavour is to ſilence it, which they find by experience cannot be done ſo effectually by any other method, as this of taking off the reſpect paid to Religion, from which conſcience borrows the terrors, that make its admonitions ſo unwelcome. Beſide, they think it ſhews their ſuperiority over the reſt of mankind to laugh at what they are afraid of; as it is alſo convenient for their character of wit, to exert it on topicks, where it is ſafe from being rivaled, by men of real underſtanding.

Theſe weighty conſiderations determined him to ſeaſon his Scheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it be the better reliſhed. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of ſuch moment, he at length hit upon a plan, that pleaſed him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his eſtate there was an iſland, the natural beauties of whoſe ſituation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this iſland he erected a building, exactly on the model of the monaſteries, which he had ſeen in other countries; and to make the reſemblance compleat, there was not a vice, that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practiſing which he did not make proviſion in his. The cellars were ſtored with the choiceſt wines; the larders with the delicacies of every climate; and the *cells* were fitted up, for all the purpoſes of laſciviouſneſs, for which proper objects were alſo provided.

Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itſelf, may ſeem to have been deſigned only againſt thoſe ſocieties of human inſtitution: But it was beneath his genius and ſpirit to ſtop here. Nothing leſs would ſatisfy him, than to attack the very eſſentials of the Religion eſtabliſhed by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every ſerious perſon in it, to be divine.

For

For this pious purpoſe, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was to find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this, his rank, and courſe or life made him not long at a loſs. He ſelected from among his intimates a number equal to that of thoſe, who had been at the firſt choſen to inculcate the Religion, which he deſigned to ridicule, whoſe names they aſſumed, as he with equal modeſty and piety did that of the divine author of it: And to ſupply any decreaſe in this number by death, or deſertion from the terrours of reflection, he inſtituted an inferiour order of as many more, choſen alſo with the greateſt caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes and mirthful accompliſhments.

The probationary office of theſe latter was to attend upon their ſuperiours in the celebration of their myſteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monaſtery, where no other ſervants were ever permitted to enter, on the moſt common occaſion, as the very *decorations* of it would in a great meaſure have betrayed their ſecrets, the ceiling being covered with emblems and devices too groſs to require explanation to the meaneſt capacity; and the walls painted with the pourtraits of thoſe whoſe names and characters they aſſumed, repreſented in attitudes, and actions, horrible to imagination.

Nor was their care to keep their myſteries impenetrably ſecret confined to this excluſion of common ſervants. The diffidence of conſcious guilt made them even diſtruſt each other, till bound to ſecrecy by oaths, and imprecations, receiving their force, from the Religion thus abuſed by them: An abſurdity common among men aſſociated for the moſt flagitious purpoſes.

But ſtrong as the power of ſuperſtition is over weak and wicked minds, (for nothing but the groſſeſt ſuperſtition could make them think oaths in ſuch circumſtance binding!) their ſecrecy was ſecured by a ſtill ſtronger motive, which was fear.

They were ſenſible that even ſuſpicion of ſuch vices would for ever exclude them from the ſociety of all thoſe, whom in deſpite of themſelves, they could not

help holding in reſpect; and that ſo outrageous an inſult upon the laws was liable to puniſhment from the ſecular power, though they might by their intereſt evade the direct effects of which, yet the imputation would make them ſo obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the ſtate, if their reſentment did not ariſe ſtill higher, and make them take that puniſhment into their own hands! and theſe fears prevented the ſecrets from being divulged even by ſuch as had reſolution enough to deſert the ſociety; as they imagined the ſtain could never be ſo effectually expunged, as to ſecure them from thoſe conſequences.

The rites of this ſociety, and the ceremonies obſerved upon admiſſion into it, will be beſt explained by the account of what I ſaw my maſter perform on this occaſion, when he was a candidate for the higher order, having already ſerved his noviciate in the lower.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice in preferring CHRYSAL's *maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *juſt as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſiter upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak.*

IT was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my maſter arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no ſooner made the concerted ſignal, than a boat was ſent to ferry him over.

On his landing in the iſland, he went to the monaſtery where he found the ſociety juſt ſitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a ſhort meal, and drank their ſpirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their reſpective cells, to prepare for the ſolemnity they were going to celebrate. My maſter then clad in a milk white robe of the fineſt linen, that flowed looſely round him, repaired at the tolling of a bell, to the chapel, the ſcene of all their myſterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the ſound of ſoft, and ſolemn muſick.

On his entrance he made a moſt profound obeiſance, and advancing ſlowly toward a table, that ſtood againſt the wall, in the upper end of the chapel, as ſoon as he came to the rails, by which it was ſurrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profeſſion of his principles, nearly in the words, but with the moſt groſs perverſion of the ſenſe of the articles of faith of the religion eſtabliſhed in the country, demanded admiſſion within the

rails, the peculiar ſtation of the upper order, where the ſuperiour and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) ſtood arrayed in the habits of thoſe, whoſe names and characters they profaned by their aſſumption.

When he had finiſhed, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profeſſion alſo preferred the ſame claim; as there were more who had a right to do, but diſcouraged by the ſuperiour merit of theſe two, they had declined their pretenſions for this time.

The brotherhood having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the ſuperiour repeated a prayer, in the ſame ſtrain and manner with the *profeſſion* of the candidates, *to the Being whom they ſerved* to direct their choice to him of the two moſt worthy of his ſervice.

The ſuperiour then proceeded to take the ſuffrages of the reſt, with the ſame mimick ſolemnity; when my maſter being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inſpiration, and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received *the name* and *character*, which he was to bear in the ſociety, in a manner not proper to be deſcribed, every the moſt ſacred rite and ceremony of Religion being profaned, all the prayers and hymns of praiſe appointed for the worſhip of the Deity burleſqued by a perverſion to the horrid occaſion.

In this manner the evening was waſted till ſupper-time, when they ſat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occaſion, at which nothing that the moſt refined luxury, the moſt laſcivious imagination could ſuggeſt to kindle looſe deſire, and provoke and gratify appetite was wanting, both the ſuperiours, and the inferiours, (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as ſoon as they had ſerved in the banquet) vying with each other in looſe ſongs and diſſertations of ſuch groſs lewdneſs, and daring impiety, as deſpair may be ſuppoſed to dictate to the damn'd, in both which, my maſter ſhone ſo unrival'd as to bear down the ſuperiour ſprightlineſs, wit, and humour of all the reſt; and compenſate for the want of every companionable merit.

But

But while they were in the height of their feſtivity, an affair happened, that interrupted it for a time, and ſhewed their reſolution, particularly that of my maſter, in a proper light.

The perſon, who had that day been his competitor for the honour of admiſſion into the higher order of the ſociety, poſſeſſed the qualifications, which he wanted, in the moſt eminent degree. He had ſuch a flow of ſpirits, that it was impoſſible ever to be a moment dull in his company. His wit gave charms to every ſubject he ſpoke upon; and his humour diſplayed the foibles of mankind in ſuch colours, as to put even folly out of countenance.

But the ſame vanity, which had firſt made him ambitious of entering into this ſociety, only becauſe it was compoſed of perſons of a rank ſuperiour to his own in life, and ſtill kept him in it, tho' upon acquaintance he deſpiſed themſelves, ſullied all theſe advantages. His ſpirits were often ſtretched to extravagance to over-power competition. His humour was debaſed into buffoonery; and his wit was ſo proſtituted to the luſt of applauſe, that he would ſacrifice his beſt friend for a ſcurvy jeſt; and wound the heart of him, whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to ſerve, only to raiſe a laugh; in which he was alſo aſſiſted by a peculiar archneſs of diſpoſition, and an unlucky expertneſs at carrying his *jeſts into practice*, as he proved upon this occaſion.

Though he diſdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my maſter's higher rank in life would carry the point in diſpute againſt him; for which injuſtice he reſolved to revenge himſelf in the moſt ſignal manner.

For this purpoſe he had contrived the night before, to bring into his cell a great *Baboon* which he had provided for the occaſion. When the brotherhood retired to their cells after dinner as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himſelf of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dreſſed up in the phantaſtick garb, in which childiſh imagination cloaths devils, into the

the chapel, where he ſhut him up in a large cheſt, that ſtood there to hold the ornaments, and utenſils of the table, when the ſociety was away. To the ſpring of the lock of this cheſt he faſtened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own ſeat, and there brought the end of it through an hole, made for the purpoſe, in ſuch a manner that he could readily find it; and by giving it a pull, open the cheſt, and let the *Baboon* looſe, whenever he pleaſed, without being perceived by any of the reſt of the company.

Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my maſter's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raiſed toward Heaven repeating an invocation, in the perverted phraſe of Holy Writ, to the Being whom they ſerved, to come among them, and receive their adorations in perſon, he pulled the cord, and let the animal looſe, who, glad to be delivered from his confinement, gave a ſudden ſpring upon the middle of the table.

The effect, which the ſight of ſuch a viſiter had upon them, may be better conceived than expreſſed. Their attention had been ſo fixed upon what my maſter was ſaying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing ſo critically at the invocation, and in ſuch a ſhape, made them conclude he was *the Being invoked.*

Terrified out of their ſenſes by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, *The Devil! the Devil!* and ſtarting from their ſeats made directly toward the door, tumbling over one another, and over-ſetting every thing in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confuſion, *the Baboon* frighted at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my maſter's ſhoulders, as he lay ſprawling on the floor, who turning about his head and feeling the ſhock, ſaw the animal grinning horribly at him, and concluded the Devil had obeyed his ſummons in good earneſt, and come to carry him bodily away.

Driven as he was to deſpair, by this thought, he ſtrove however, in the inſtinctive impulſe of ſelf-preſervation, to ſhake off the invader; but he, inſtead of looſing his hold, on his repeated efforts, only clung

to

to him the cloſer, claſping his paws around his neck, and chattering with ſpight at his ear. This compleated the caitiff's diſtreſs. Every ſhadow of ſpirit failed him, and conſcious guilt ſuggeſting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted in the blindneſs of his fear to move the very Devil to pity, by his pathetick wailings, and ſupplications.

"Spare me, gracious Devil!" (ſaid he) "ſpare a wretch, "who never was ſincerely your ſervant! I ſinned only "from vanity of being in the faſhion! thou knoweſt I never "have been half ſo wicked, as I pretended; I never have "been able to commit the thouſandth part of the vices, "which I have boaſted of. Take not then the advan-"tage of that vanity; but judge me only from my "actions. I knew not that thou wouldſt have come, or "I ſhould never have invoked thee! leave me therefore, "and go to thoſe, who are more truly devoted to thy "ſervice. I am but half a ſinner. My conſcience "always flew in my face when I committed any crime! "my heart gave the lie to my tongue, when I gloried in "my vices; and I trembled at the damnation I affected "to brave! O ſpare me therefore, at leaſt for this time, "till I have ſerved thee better. I am as yet but half "a ſinner."

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL'S *maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the inſtance of* CHRYSAL'S *maſter is expelled the ſociety for preſuming to ridicule their rites. Farther conſequences of this affair make the ſuperiour break up his monaſtery, and build a church.*

WHILE my maſter was making this eſſay of his eloquence upon *the Baboon*, the perſon who had brought him there took the opportunity of the conſterna-

tion

tion the whole company was in, to open one of the windows unperceived by them for the animal to make his eſcape, which he no ſooner ſaw, than he made directly to it, giving my maſter an happy releaſe.

Before he could get clear off though, one of the company, who was bolder than the reſt, having muſtered reſolution to raiſe his head, got a full view of him, and perceiving what he was, juſt as my maſter concluded his ſupplications, " Your prayers are heard!" (ſaid he, ſtarting up, and ſpeaking as ſoon as a burſt of laughter gave him utterance) " your prayers are heard for this time; " and that Devil of a great *He-baboon*, that's juſt gone " out of the window deſpiſing *half a ſinner*, has ſpared " you, till you are fitter for his ſervice."——

At hearing theſe words, they all aroſe from the floor, where they had lain ſprawling on top of one another, and looking in amazement, at him who had ſpoke them, " Courage, my friends!" (ſaid he) " this is but a falſe " alarm! our *maſter* is not ſo ready to come for us when " we call him, or we ſhould none of us all be here now. " How *a Baboon* though ſhould come here to ſcare us " all out of our little wits in ſuch a manner, the Devil " may tell you, if he will, for I cannot; but I'll ſwear " I ſaw one go out of that window."——

" And I'll ſwear too, that I ſaw him come in at it; " (replied the author of the miſchief, who ſaw no way to eſcape detection, but by preventing farther enquiry by this bold lie) " as I juſt then happened to look about " to ſee from whence the wind came, that blew upon " my poll."——

This ecclairciſſement ſatisfied them all! they inſtantly ſet the room to rights, and plaſtering up their broken ſhins and noſes, ſat down to conclude their carouſal, reſuming their former ſtrain, in which they all exerted themſelves in an uncommon manner, to wipe off the diſgrace of their late *ſqueaking*, particularly my maſter, who *out-did his uſual out-doing*, in profaneneſs, blaſphemy, and wickedneſs of every kind, to recover his character, and convince them he was more than *half a ſinner*.

They held in this hand, till nature ſunk under the fatigue, when they retired to ſleep off their debauch, in their *cells*; where, as I ſaid, proper proviſion had been

been made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of reſt.

Though the affair of the *Baboon* had paſſed off ſo cleverly while their ſpirits were in ſuch a flurry, when they came to enquire more coolly into it next day, the whole trick came out. It had been impoſſible to convey him into the monaſtery, without the privity of ſome of the ſervants, who had all ſo often *felt the jeſts* of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the diſcovery.

This account, confirmed by ſome circumſtances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty perſon, the ſuperiours adjourned directly to the chapel to conſult how they ſhould proceed on ſo delicate an occaſion. For though they had always highly approved of ſuch *wit*, when *practiſed* upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themſelves in the moſt heinous light, eſpecially in ſuch an inſtance as this, the conſequences of which had expoſed them to the contempt of each other, by detecting their *weakneſs*, and ſhewing that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned.

Mortifying as this was to their vanity, the thought however that the caſe was general, afforded them ſome conſolation. However, to remedy the effect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like diſgrace, it was propoſed, after mature deliberation, and much learned argument on the queſtion, to bury what was paſt, by a ſolemn act of amneſty, and make a ſpecial law, whoſe obſervation ſhould be enforced *by an oath*, that no member ſhould ever after preſume to attempt exerciſing his wit upon the ſociety, in any manner, or by any means whatſoever; on taking which oath, and aſking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender ſhould be forgiven.

To this propoſal, they all aſſented except my maſter, who for private reaſons thought the latter part of it much too mild for ſo flagrant a crime. He had long cheriſhed a ſecret grudge againſt the other, who not only often pointed his wit againſt him, in a manner that he could not digeſt nor knew how to reſent, it being as polite as

it

it was keen, but alſo put him conſtantly to the expence of double wickedneſs, the only qualification in which he could poſſibly ſhine, to avoid being totally eclipſed by him: His deſire of revenge alſo was ſtrongeſt on this occaſion, as he had ſuffered the deepeſt diſgrace.

Accordingly he exerted all his eloquence, to ſhew *the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies eſtabliſhed by the laws of the ſociety into ridicule*; the letting of which eſcape without adequate puniſhment, he ſaid, would argue weakneſs and want of ſpirit in them, and muſt end in the ruin of their authority; for which weighty reaſons he propoſed that the offender ſhould be directly expelled the ſociety in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like inſult for the future.

This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignity's being inſulted, and expelled him that moment, without even waiting to hear him in his own defence. But he ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing himſelf amply avenged.

The care they took to keep every thing they did ſecret, had long awoke the curioſity of the neighbourhood, who were the more ſevere in their gueſſes, the leſs able they were to gueſs right. But the affair of the *Baboon*, whom the ſervants got ſight of, before he could be caught, and whether miſled by his dreſs, or miſrepreſenting by deſign, gave out to be *the Devil*, was no ſooner known than a formal ſtory was propagated over the whole country, that the end of their meeting was to worſhip the Devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had *often* been ſeen among them, in variety of ſhapes.

Scandal always meets eaſy credit. The ſtory was believed by many, and repeated by more as if they believed it, never loſing any thing in the repetition; till ſuch an univerſal alarm was raiſed among the people (who are content to infringe the precepts of Religion, without denying its authority) that the ſuperiour, whoſe ſeat was in the neighbourhood, found it neceſſary to diſſolve the ſociety, and effacing every trace of it, convert the building to the better uſe of a pleaſure-houſe,

in

in which he entertained all his neighbours in general, whenever he was in the country: Beſide which, he alſo built a church, on an eminence near his houſe, that anſwered the double purpoſe, of convincing the populace of his regard to Religion, and of making a beautiful termination, to a viſta which he had juſt cut through a wood, in his park.

I have anticipated theſe circumſtances to ſatisfy your curioſity; as I have alſo omitted many, and ſoftened more particulars in this account, which were too horrid to have been repreſented in their proper colours.

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent; with ſome ſtriking inſtances of œconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for, from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth.

YOU are aſtoniſhed how ſuch ſcenes of debauchery and exceſs could be ſupported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the conſtitutions of his gueſts; but this ſhall be explained.

To prevent ſatiety or fatigue, theſe meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time; nor held oftner than twice in a year; by which frugality of pleaſure, they were always returned to, with the keenneſs of novelty: And as for the expence of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community; (the ſuperiour contributing nothing more, than any other member, except the firſt coſt of building the *convent*, which he thought himſelf amply recompenſed for, by the honour of having ſtruck out the plan;) and regulated by the ſtricteſt œconomy; the ſlaves of their luſts being ſent back to the brothels, from whence they had been brought; and the ſervants of their luxury diſcharged, at the end of every meeting; and no more retained for the reſt of the year, than an old man and woman who took care of the place.

To you, who have ſupported the dignity of your nature,

ture, by preferring the pleaſures of that reaſon, which was given to diſtinguiſh man from brutes, to thoſe of ſenſe, which they enjoy in common with him, the picture of this whole ſcene muſt appear *over-charged*, and irreconcileable with the great principles of human action, which always propoſe ſome *good*, either preſent or future, however the judgment may err in the thing propoſed. But more acquaintance with life would ſolve this difficulty to you.

The general motive for attempting to turn Religion into ridicule has been already explained. But as ſome are ſeen to give into this practice, who ſeem to cultivate their reaſon with moſt ſucceſs; and whoſe actions, and even inclinations appear not to have the remoteſt tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for ſuch an exception.

The firſt principle of action, impreſſed by nature on every thing that lives, is *ſelf-preſervation*. From this *brute* animals, which *by neceſſity* proceed regularly in the courſe preſcribed for them, never ſwerve: But the *rational* animal, man, bewildered in his own imaginations, by the abuſe of that *liberty*, which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of *reaſon*, often ſubſtitutes another in its place, by whoſe impulſe he acts in direct oppoſition to it.

This is *vanity*; the real ſource of that ambition, which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into deſtruction, however ſpeciouſly it may be diſguiſed under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the publick good; as well as of moſt of the extravagancies, and abſurdities, which puzzle ſuperficial obſervers, and make them preſumptuouſly impeach as a defect in the work of nature, their own neglect, and perverſion of its laws.

A particular enquiry into the effects of this *ſuppoſititious* principle, many of which, as I ſaid, are blazoned as the brighteſt virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the moſt atrocious crimes; or how nearly ſuch virtues and crimes, proceeding thus from the ſame ſource, may be allied, though curious and intereſting in itſelf, is not neceſſary here. It is ſufficient to obſerve, that its power is able to break the force of habit,

bit, reconcile contradictions, and confound the eſſential differences of things; to cope with *prejudice*, and overrule the *infirmities* of nature.

This it is, for inſtance, that makes the *conſtitutional* coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would ſee his country ruined, rather than draw his ſword in its defence, *fight duels* for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony; the *ſuperſtitious* wretch, who finds *omens*, in *ſpilled ſalt*, and *croſſed ſtraws*, and *ſees Goblins* and *Devils* in the dark, profeſs infidelity, ridicule Providence, and dare the wrath of Heaven, by inſults and bravadoes; and laſtly, this it is, that makes the hoary Sage, whoſe life has been regulated by the ſtricteſt principles of morality and religion, while paſſion might have rebelled againſt them, commence Libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has loſt the power to practiſe. Of the juſtice of theſe remarks the members of this ſociety, of which vanity was the cement, as it hath been the origin, afforded the moſt glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of, in ſuch an aſſociation! but you do not reflect, that vanity is never the reſult of real worth. The falſe glare of publick eſtimation reflects it from the vileſt and moſt reproachful objects.

The inſtitutor of this ſociety, was *admired* for every polite accompliſhment, every power of pleaſing in converſation; and the firſt ſet he choſe were all of the ſame caſt. This, with their rank and fortunes, and above all, the myſtery of the inſtitution, which ſet curioſity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the moſt flattering ideas of it, made admiſſion into it, an object of univerſal ambition, as it ſeemed a proof of every member's meriting the ſame character; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many aſhamed to quit it; and even they, who did, were precluded from diſcovering any thing that might deter others, by the ſecrecy to which they were ſworn.

There is one thing more, which from the particular circumſtances of your own life affects you more than any other, in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of laviſhing the bleſſing of wealth to the diſhonour

nour of the donor; and with ſo little regard to its real uſe. But this, as has been the caſe in other inſtances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in thoſe parts of the earth, where the bleſſings of nature are beſtowed with greateſt liberality, the people ſeem leaſt ſenſible of them; and are ſunk in the groſſeſt vice; as if reaſon and virtue were incompatible with the good things of this world.

The reaſon of this remark holds with reſpect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profuſion with every thing they want, the rich look no farther than to the gratification of their appetites and paſſions; as the means to procure which are in their poſſeſſion, they acknowledge no obligation to the power, which firſt gave, and ſtill preſerves the enjoyment of them; but on the contrary, affect to ſhew their independance, by proſtituting it to purpoſes, directly contrary to his declared pleaſure; and this cauſes that abuſe of wealth, which generally marrs the bleſſing, and makes the gift of it ſo dangerous.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents, in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character.

I SEE you deſire to have ſome account of the ſeveral members of ſo extraordinary a ſociety. When the great lines which diſtinguiſh the characters of mankind are marked by virtues, or even by ſuperiour abilities, that dazzle ſuperficial obſervation, by the ſplendour of their effects, and paſs for ſuch, however different in the tendency of their exertions, the delineation affords pleaſure; but on the contrary where thoſe lines are all diſtorted

torted by vice and folly; and diſtinguiſhed from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation is a pain; and to paint them a taſk ſo diſagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However your curioſity ſhall be gratified.

As the *convent* was dedicated to pleaſure; you may imagine that play made a part of their entertainment. Contrary indeed to the ſcheme of all other parties of pleaſure, it was not the firſt object of their meeting; and only ſerved to fill up the intervals between other pleaſures, which nature without ſome reſpite could not ſupport in ſuch exceſs. The circulation however, even in this *piddling* for mere amuſement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters; ſuch of which as contained any thing worthy of your notice, for you muſt not expect it from them all, I will give you ſome general ſketches of.

As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occaſions, to aſſiſt you in in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the table ſits the ſuperiour. You ſee every eye is expreſſively fixed upon him, in admiration at the vivacity, humour, and wit in all he ſays, while by an art peculiarly happy, he alone ſeems unconſcious of his own pre-eminence.

Theſe talents, which from the intoxication of preſent applauſe, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the poſſeſſor, by diverting from more ſolid purſuits, proved the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune; becauſe always directed by the deepeſt and moſt delicate addreſs.

The firſt inſtance, in which this addreſs was diſplayed, was in his own family. He had a diſtant relation who had ſpent his youth in ſuch buſy ſcenes, as left not time for his imagination to wander in ſearch of amuſement. To a mind accuſtomed to be wound up to ſuch a pitch, the charms of a converſation like his were a relaxation, irreſiſtibly engaging. He inſinuated himſelf inſenſibly into his favour, and by ſeeming to have nothing in view, but his pleaſure, led him as he pleaſed himſelf,

not

not only into all the lengths of his own libertiniſm, ſo as to be a member of this ſociety, when the decline of life, at leaſt, ſhould have ſuggeſted more ſerious thoughts; but alſo at his death to reward his complaiſance with a much larger portion of his fortune, than he had any claim to from conſanguinity or the preference of reaſon.

Such ſucceſs encouraged his ambition to higher attempts. Introduced by the ſame qualifications to the acquaintance of *the great*, he not only gained their favour by them, but alſo impoſed them upon them for abilities of an higher claſs ſo far, that being ſecure of his ſubſerviency to their deſigns, they admitted him to a ſhare of their power.

But in this he had deceived himſelf as well as them; as he found to their diſappointment and his own extreme confuſion, upon the very firſt tryal of his political talents, when he ſhewed in the ſtrongeſt light the difference between the abilities requiſite to raiſe a laugh, and rule a nation.

He had ſenſe enough however to ſee his miſtake, before it had involved him in any conſequences, from which he could not recede without danger as well as diſgrace; and prudently ſacrificing his ambition to his ſafety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of thoſe pleaſures for which nature ſeemed to have ſo particularly deſigned him. Whether that enjoyment is as ſincere and undiſturbed though, as ſhould appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not ſo certain, as you may be apt to imagine.

The principles, on which this ſociety was originally inſtituted, and from which it has never deviated, *the profeſſed ridicule of moral Virtue and Religion*, ſhould ſeem to have proceeded from an utter diſbelief of a Deity; or at leaſt, a fearleſs defiance of his power; but contrary to this, there ſtarts not at his own ſhadow, a more abject ſlave to ſuperſtition and all its fooliſh fears, than he was at the time of his inſtituting it, and ſtill remains.

Such an inconſiſtence requires explanation to you, whoſe notions of life are formed ſolely from rational ſpeculation.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition.

THE political principles of his family being in avow'd oppoſition to their Sovereign, the earlieſt care was taken to inſtil the ſame into him; and the ripeneſs of his parts and genius flattered them with a promiſe of his future conſequence in the ſtate.

For this purpoſe, before reaſon ſhould have time to be convinced by experience of the injuſtice, and danger of ſuch deſigns, he was ſent abroad to be educated in a country, where every object ſhould concur to prejudice him againſt the laws and conſtitution of his own, and the opportunity of perſonal intercourſe confirm his attachment to him, whoſe intereſt he was intended to promote.

The publick conduct of his life has ſufficiently ſhewn the ſucceſs of this ſcheme: as an incidental circumſtance in the execution of it will alſo account for the inconſiſtencies in his private character.

The religious principles eſtabliſhed in the country, whither he was thus ſent for education; and the political ones, it was deſigned he ſhould aſſiſt to eſtabliſh at home, were ſo intimately and eſſentially connected, that it was impoſſible to find a tutor for him ſufficiently attached to the latter, to anſwer the purpoſe of his family, who was not alſo at leaſt ſecretly inclined to, even if he did not openly profeſs, the former.

But

But this made no difficulty. Religion is in reality the thing leaſt thought of, however pompouſly it may be profeſſed in political ſchemes. They ſcrupled not therefore to commit his tender mind to the influence of ſuch an one, regardleſs what impreſſions he might make upon it, beſide thoſe they deſired: An opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of.

Accordingly as ſoon as the tutor and his pupil were ſettled in the place of their deſignation, the former began his deſign, by diſplaying on every occaſion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the Religion profeſſed there, as the objects moſt likely to ſtrike the levity of youth, always complaining with a contemptuous concern of the want of ſuch in that of his own country; not chuſing to ſpeak more directly at firſt, for fear of giving him any alarm.

But artful as this method was, he had the diſappointment to ſee, it did not ſucceed ſo well as he could wiſh. Though from the manner of his pupil's earlieſt education, it was eaſy enough to ſink his own Religion in his opinion, yet ſome circumſtances rendered the raiſing of any other in its place, a matter of more difficulty, than might have been obviouſly apprehended. His natural quickneſs and turn of ridicule made him ſee every thing in the moſt diſadvantageous light, at the firſt glance, at the ſame time that his diſſipation and levity prevented his attending to the abſtruſer arguments, often neceſſary to eſtabliſh the credit of matters of ſuch importance beyond the reach of rational doubt; ſo that all the pains his tutor was piouſly taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect, of making him an infidel.

Alarmed at this, the tutor, whoſe bigotted credulity had ſwallowed every fiction of ſuperſtition, had always ſome miraculous ſtory of a *judgment* or *apparition* ready to refute the ſcoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himſelf advanced. The conſtant repetition of ſuch tales, which he plainly ſhowed his own belief of, inſenſibly made ſuch an impreſſion on his pupil's imagination, as perſuaded him of their poſſibility at leaſt, if he was not abſolutely convinced of the truth

truth of every thing in proof of which they were alledged; and filled him with fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nurſery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terrour, his tutor took him one day to ſee the exhibition of one of thoſe miracles, which are ſaid to be wrought at the ſhrine of a conteſted ſaint; and which really weaken the credit of the Religion, they were deviſed to ſupport.

The abſurdity was too ſtriking to eſcape his obſervation. He turned it into the moſt poignant ridicule, in ſpite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who finding that his arguments had no effect, had recourſe to his uſual proof of an *apparition*, which he dreſſed up in every colour and circumſtance of horrour, to make it have the greater weight.

His pupil took not more than uſual notice of the matter, while light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himſelf alone, and in the dark, the whole flaſhed upon him in all its terrours, heightened in every inſtance, by the livelineſs of his own imagination.

What he felt in ſuch a ſituation may eaſier be conceived than expreſſed. He covered up his head with the cloaths; and lay ſweating and trembling, till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the ſame thoughts, and he ſunk into a kind of ſlumber.

But this was far from giving him relief. He was no ſooner aſleep, than imagination, now in her own empire, placed him, in the midſt of the ſcene, which had juſt before been ſo elaborately deſcribed to him, by his tutor, from the contemplation of which he was delivered only to ſuffer ſtill more ſeverely; being awakened by ſounds uncouth enough to ſtartle, at ſuch a time, the moſt reſolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realized all the horrours of his dream. He ſtarted up; and turning in the inſtinctive curioſity of affright to that part of the room, from whence the ſounds ſtill continued to come, ſaw four glaring eye-balls fixed upon him, at the ſame time that a voice diſtinctly articulated, but in a tremendous

tone, and language which he did not underſtand, thundered directly in his ear.

The darkneſs, which prevented his ſeeing the bodies, to which thoſe eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the import of the ſounds, only added to his fright by giving room to imagination, not only to form the moſt horrible conceptions of them, but alſo to apprehend them ſtill more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to ſupport ſuch an attack; but giving one helpleſs ſhriek, ſunk back in a ſwoon.

His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the ſame ſounds, but was not ſo much terrified at them, both becauſe his mind was not ſo well prepared for terrours, and that he was acquainted with their cauſe, heard him ſhriek, and knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want aſſiſtance, with the *cats*, which he heard in his room; for from two of thoſe animals, which finding the window open, had choſen it for the ſcene of their amours, had thoſe dreadful ſounds proceeded.

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake; and pioufly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory.

YOU may judge how he was affected at ſeeing the perſon, upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in ſuch a ſituation. Awkward

Awkward at the beſt, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any aſſiſtance, nor had even the preſence of mind to call any one who could, ſo great was his embarraſſment and confuſion. Nature however ſoon delivered him from his diſtreſs, and reſtored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As ſoon as he came a little to himſelf, he ſtared wildly round him for ſome moments, and then fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who ſtill ſtood gaping in amazement at him, he miſtook him, from his being in his ſhirt, for the Saint that ran in his head, his imagination ſtill continuing the former ſcene, and holding up his hands in a ſuppliant poſture, as he lay trembling on his back, " O mercy, gracious Saint!" " (ſaid he) " Have mercy on my youth! never will " I again preſume to ridicule any of the ſacred rites " of Religion! never will I admit a doubt of any " thing it commands me to believe! O mercy! mer- " cy."——— Saying which words he fainted away again.

This addreſs, one word of which the tutor did not underſtand, threw him into a fright almoſt as great as that of his pupil. He ſtood for ſome time ſtupified by aſtoniſhment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his ſhirt, care for his own health conquered every other concern, and made him go to put on his cloaths before he attempted to do any thing for the other.

While he was dreſſing himſelf, he conſidered what his pupil had ſaid, with rather more attention than his fear had permitted before, and recollecting the ſubject of their converſation the preceding evening, concluded that Heaven had made uſe of ſome ſupernatural means to ſubdue his infidelity, the impreſſion of which remaining ſtill upon his mind, had occaſioned his miſtaking him in the manner he did, for a Saint; (for that he ſhould be terrified to that degree by the ſcreaming of the cats, never came into his head) and piouſly reſolved to contribute his aſſiſtance to the deception, by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he ſaw occaſion.

With this intention, he returned to his pupil, determined though not to diſcloſe his ſuſpicion, till the other ſhould make ſome diſcovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was juſt come to himſelf, knew him directly now he was dreſſed, and catching his hand eagerly as ſoon as he came within his reach, "O my deareſt, my beſt friend!" (ſaid he preſſing it to his lips) "What have I ſuffered ſince I ſaw you? "How dearly have I paid for the profaneneſs, and "infidelity of which you have ſo often reproved me, "with pious and paternal care. But never will I be "guilty of the like again. I reſign myſelf implicitely "to your direction; and will from this hour believe "every thing you require me."——

His tutor, after giving him ſome ſpiritual comfort, and encouraging his perſeverance in this pious reſolution, deſired to know what had been the happy occaſion of it, to which the other anſwered, that *ſome little time after he went to bed, the room was ſuddenly enlightened in a manner not to be deſcribed, when the apparition, of which he had given him an account the evening before, ſtood before him wrapped in blue flames, and breathing ſmoak and ſulphur; and calling to him in a voice that appalled his ſoul, denounced Heaven's vengeance againſt his infidelity, which he was juſt going to put in execution, when the holy Saint, whoſe miracles he had ſo impiouſly turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory; and interpoſing between him, and the ſpectre, the latter gave a ſhriek that ſhook the room, and then vaniſhed in a flame of fire; upon which the Saint turned to him with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and diſappeared.*

Ready as his tutor was to believe every thing, that exceeded belief, when alledged in the cauſe Religion, the circumſtance of his own having been miſtaken for a Saint, ſtaggered his faith in all the reſt, and made him for once juſtly conclude that the whole miracle was no more than a fiction of that fear with which the

the ſcreaming of the cats ſtruck him in his ſleep, for he now plainly traced the effects of their voices.

However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon the thought; and as ſoon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and ſolemn air added a ſequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree of veracity; the former being deceived himſelf, and having eked out the illuſions of his fear, as diſtracted imagination ſuggeſted to him; whereas the latter aggravated thoſe illuſions, by untruths premeditately deviſed to confirm that deception.

He ſaid, *that grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the ſpiritual ſafety of one ſo dear to him, inſtead of lying down to reſt, he had fallen upon his knees, und poured out his ſoul, in prayer and ſupplication to Heaven to enlighten his (pupil's) mind, and convince him of his errours, in which holy exerciſe he had continued ever ſince, till this moment, when in the impulſe of a perſuaſion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inſpired, that his prayers were heard, he came to ſatisfy himſelf of the reality of ſo miraculous an event, for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to Heaven, and the bleſſed Saint, who had wrought it.*

This compleated the deception of his pupil, ſo far as to make him believe the truth of ſome parts of his own tale, which he was not altogether ſo certain of before. He aroſe therefore, and reconciling himſelf to the faith of his tutor, by the ſtrongeſt, and moſt full profeſſions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him to prayer, and pious converſation.

In the firſt heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair publick, and openly joining himſelf to that Religion, whoſe truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, ſenſible that ſuch a ſtep would not only defeat the political deſigns of his friends, which muſt be carried on under a maſque, and in whoſe ſucceſs his own wiſhes were moſt warmly intereſted; but alſo overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church-living of great

revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promiſed it to him, as ſoon as the incumbent, then ſinking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, ſhould die: For his religious principles never interfered with his intereſt.

For theſe moſt weighty reaſons, though as you may imagine he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profeſſion of his new faith, till he ſhould in the fullneſs of time be ſo happy as to contribute his aſſiſtance to the great event, which ſhould eſtabliſh it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect, upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool ſo faſt, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reverſed, and his practice as libertine as ever, though fear of ſeeing any more ſpectres reſtrained his profeſſions within more decent bounds. For ſo deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not to ſleep by himſelf, or be a moment alone in the dark: Though his tutor ſoon after his return home, divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himſelf, with the addition of many circumſtances, if poſſible ſtill more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himſelf with a particular enemy of his, from whom he expected a recompence for ſo pleaſing a piece of ſcandal; to invalidate which was one of his pupil's motives for inſtituting this ſociety.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine, in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſter-ſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue.

AT the right hand of the ſuperior you ſee one, whoſe example ſhould be a warning to mankind never to be off their guard againſt the allurements of vice, while there is any poſſibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it.

While youth might have been pleaded in excuſe of paſſion; and the buſy application of manhood extenuated any ſpeculative errors in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the ſtricteſt regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of Religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry give place to cool reflection, and the ſerenity of the proſpect more than compenſates for its approaching cloſe, the whole ſcene was wretchedly reverſed, and his ſetting ſun over-caſt, with a cloud of vices moſt blameable in any ſtage of life, but aggravated ten thouſand-fold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before, that vanity was the cauſe of a fall, ſo reproachful to humanity: The manner though of its operating upon one, who ſeemed to be removed ſo far beyond its reach is worthy of attention.

In no inſtance is the power of vanity ſo tyrannically exerted over the human heart, as when it ariſes from an opinion of literary merit. The reaſon is obvious.

Real

Real learning is the moſt effectual check to vanity, as it ſhews the inſtability of its foundation. When therefore any thing that makes pretence, however falſely, to that name, ſeems to adminiſter to its ſupport, it inſtantly looks upon itſelf as above controul.

Though early engagement in the activer ſcenes of his country's ſervice had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abſtruſe purſuits of ſpeculation, his natural inclination to them, directed by a taſte formed by the beſt education, made him embrace all opportunities of patronizing every advance in ſcience, and improvement in the finer arts.

The liberality with which he indulged this inclination ſoon marked him out to the attacks of every needy adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors conſulted him on their ſchemes. Poets ſubmitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot, were the inexhauſted theme of panegyrick; and dedications declared to the world his abilities, and knowledge.

Adulation ſo groſs was an affront to reaſon. He rejected with juſt contempt the praiſes to which he knew himſelf not entitled; and was ſuperior to the flattery, which compaſſion for the flatterer often made him ſeem to pay for. Happy had he always preſerved the ſame delicacy!

Among the crouds of paraſites, who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a perſon, whom idleneſs ſeduced to prefer this abject ſtate of dependance to the purſuit of a liberal profeſſion, which he had been bred to: A baſeneſs aggravated by his poſſeſſing every qualification neceſſary to have made him eminent in any ſtate.

This man, who had thoroughly ſtudied the human heart, ſoon ſaw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He therefore ſtruck out a new ſcheme, the depth of which ſecur'd it from detection, tho' at the ſame time, the difficulty of carrying it into execution would have diſcouraged any one, leſs anxious for ſucceſs, and confident of his own abilities. He diſguiſed the ſtrongeſt flattery under the maſque of the moſt cynical bluntneſs, and candour,

and

and inſtead of praiſing all he did, and echoing in aſſent every word he ſpoke, he miſſed no occaſion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being, who could debaſe the dignity of his nature ſo far as to give up his judgment to another, from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour ſo ſingular neceſſarily attracted the notice of his patron, as the manner in which it was carried on, ſoon won his favour: For in all the debates of any moment, which this champion for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with ſuch delicate art, as to lead him (his patron) to confute him, though frequently contrary to the opinion, with which he had originally ſet out: In trifles indeed, where being foiled could reflect no diſgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himſelf when it was won.

But with others he obſerved not ſuch moderation. Be the ſubject what it would, he exerted all his powers, (and great as I have ſaid they were) till he ſilenced at leaſt, if he could not convince his adverſary, over whom he then triumph'd in all the inſolence of ſuperiority.

Such a method could not fail of ſucceſs! his patron ſure of coming off with honour, ſought every opportunity of entering into debate with him, and contracted an eſteem for one who as he thought had thus diſcovered to him his own abilities, while every one elſe declined entering into a conteſt, which always involved them in diſgrace.

Encouraged by this ſucceſs, he boldly ventured upon a ſtroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification to his own depraved taſte, he had written a treatiſe in which the groſſeſt libertiniſm was ſet in ſo advantageous and alluring a light, and the arguments againſt it evaded with ſo much plauſibility and true wit, as were almoſt ſufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its ſincereſt votaries.

The contradiction between ſuch principles, and the practice of his patron, through his whole life, would have deterred any one leſs enterprizing, and experienced

rienced in the weakneſſes of human nature, from diſcloſing them; but he had lately made ſome diſcoveries, which emboldened him even to puſh his deſigns much farther, than owning himſelf the author of that book.

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to perſiſt in buſier purſuits, he had deſpiſed the flattery paid to his literary merits; but as ſoon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for ſuch employment, he with a natural partiality gave the preference to that preheminence, which he thought ſtill within his reach, and affected to ſlight all fame, that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind.

This was a ſufficient direction to the paraſite. He immediately ſhewed his book with a myſterious air, to ſeveral of his patron's friend's, giving them broad hints at the ſame time, but under the ſeal of ſecreſy, that he was author of it. There is no way ſo effectual as this to ſpread any ſtory. One whiſpered it to another, till in a few days, the whole town was in the ſecret.

The hints, and illuſions which were every hour thrown out to the patron, on this occaſion, perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A ſecret though in the poſſeſſion of ſo many could not poſſibly remain long ſuch to him. One of his acquaintances provoked at the ſeeming affectation of his not underſtanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was ſurprized at the account, vanity would not let him ſuppreſs it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned in terms of the higheſt praiſe. He anſwered with the coy evaſions of modeſty, the moſt effectual affirmation, and ſhifted off any farther diſcuſſion of the ſubject, till he ſhould be better informed.

Accordingly the moment his friend left him, he ſent for the author of the report, and charging him with it, deſired to ſee the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him.

The paraſite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He preſented him the book without heſitation, ſaying with his uſual bluntneſs that if it was not actually written by

by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently ſaid on thoſe ſubjects; and therefore might without any injuſtice be aſſerted to be his.

The advantageous manner in which the patron had heard the book ſpoken of prevented his making any reply, till he ſhould have read it, when he was ſo ſtruck with the various beauties of it, that vanity ſubdued all his virtue, and deprived him of the power of denying it. "If the ſentiments are mine!" (ſaid he, bluſhing at his own baſeneſs, as he ſpoke) "I am "obliged to you for placing them in ſo advantageous "a light; and think I ought to decline ſharing in an "honour, ſo much of which belongs to another."—

Such a repulſe was no way diſcouraging. The paraſite repeated his aſſertion that the whole was genuinely his, both in words and ſentiments, as indeed he knew not any other, whoſe they could be; and inſiſting that he had no more merit in the affair, than barely that of writing them down, a liberty for which he begged pardon, appealed to his former conduct to acquit him of ſo mean a piece of flattery, as giving to another the honour of a work, which had not its equal.

It is not difficult to perſuade a willing mind. The patron could no longer deny what was ſo clearly proved; and what his own conſcience bore teſtimony to, againſt his falſe modeſty. All that remained was to act in ſuch a manner, that his practice ſhould not contradict this declaration of his principles; and ſo raiſe a doubt of their authenticity.

But after having made the firſt ſtep, he found no difficulty in this. He directly changed the whole tenour of his life. He laughed at morality, ridiculed Religion; and profeſſed vices he was unable to practice: And laſtly to compleat his character procured admiſſion into this ſociety, which, as I ſaid, was the proof of every polite accompliſhment and qualification; where he nods, as you ſee, over the grave, as inſenſible to the mirth, and pleaſures, enjoyed by his companions, as of the deſpicableneſs and danger of his own ſituation.

As

As for his paraſite, his end was gained. From that moment he commanded him as he pleaſed, ſharing in the enjoyment of his fortune while he lived; and ſure of ſuch a portion of it, if he ſurvived him, as ſhould ſufficiently ſupply his appetites, the only uſe for which he deſired a fortune.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.